

**This book is dedicated to: Allah's Messenger - Prophet Muhammed
(peace and blessings of Allah be on him).**

This book is a gift to: Anyone Who Search The Truth

Given by: Dr. Zakir Naik

Date: April 17th 2011

***The Holy Prophet Muhammed (pbuh)¹ said:
"Most certainly knowledge² is the cure of ignorance!"***

Dr. Zakir Naik, President of Islamic Research foundation, is a dynamic international orator on Islam and Comparative Religion. Though a Medical Doctor by professional training, he has prioritized his duty to spread the real truth about Islam worldwide, specially amongst millions of English knowing audiences. He has an incredible ability to quote extensively and verbatim from the Glorious Qur'aan, Bible and other religious scriptures. Dr. Zakir is renowned for his critical analysis and spontaneous and convincing answers to challenging questions posed by audiences and skeptics after his public talks, in the open Question & Answer sessions. He has delivered more than 600 public talks in the last six years in the U.S.A., Canada, Britain, Saudi Arabia, U.A.E., Kuwait, Qatar, Bahrain, South Africa, Mauritius, Australia, Malaysia, Singapore, Hong Kong, Thailand, Guyana (South America) and several other countries in addition to many public talks in India. His most famous debate was held in Chicago, U.S.A. on April 1, 2000 with an American Medical Doctor and Missionary, Dr. William Campbell, on the topic, "The Bible and the Qur'aan in the light of Science".

**Permission is granted to any person or organization who may wish to print this book without any changes; either for free distribution or for sale. No royalties or any other payment is required. For pdf file:
E-mail: info@islamictextbooks.com**

COMPILER'S NOTE: I have summarized the answers. The readers are requested to access: www.bridges-foundation.com; or: www.irf.net ; or: ipcisa@yebo.co.za. for more information

1 PBUH (pbuh) - means 'peace be upon him or her'.

2 The importance of knowledge has been stressed in the Glorious Qur'aan in no less than 854 times.

Please lend this book to your non-Muslim friends, neighbours and colleagues at work. Perhaps you could purchase an extra copy or make photocopies and present it to them. You will be adhering to the order of Allah and His messenger in inviting towards the truth. Hidayah (guidance) is exclusively in the control of Allah, and if any non-Muslim is sincere in seeking the truth, Allah will surely guide him.

Islam spread throughout the world among every nation only through the study and understanding of the Glorious Qur'aan. In this book there are many quotations from the Qur'aan, which may encourage them to read and study the Qur'aan.

And Allah alone knows best. All praises and glory belongs only to Him alone.

Ameen

Compiler: A.Y.Moosa July 2007

CONTENTS	
Introduction	6
Chapter One	
Common Questions asked by non-Muslims	10
What the critics have to say about the Glorious Qur'aan	29
Tributes paid to the Prophet Muhammed (pbuh)	40
Sayings of Christians Saints about Women	54
Sayings of Prophet Muhammed about Women	55
Chapter Two	
Common questions asked by Christians about the concept of God	82
Quotes from Christian Scholars about the Bible	87
What the Critics have to say about Islam	122
Prophecies in the Bible from Jesus (pbuh) about the coming of Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) (<i>Refer Question 56</i>)	156
Chapter Three	
Common questions asked by Hindus about Islam	179
Chapter Four	
Facts on St. Paul - "The real founder of Christianity"	196

Chapter Five

Summary of Lecture delivered by *Dr. Zakir Naik* 199

Topic: "Is the Qur'aan God's Word?"

Chapter Six

Analysis of the Bible and the Jews - *by Mr. Ebrahim* 233

1. **Did Prophet Muhammed copy the Qur'aan from the Bible?** 10
2. **Is the Qur'aan not the word of satan?** 26
3. Non-Muslim critics allege that the Qur'aan was not in written form during the lifetime of the Prophet. Is that true? 30
4. **Has any verses of the Qur'aan been abrogated?** 31
5. Why do Muslims call non-Muslims 'kaa'firs? 34
6. If a Muslim is allowed to marry a maximum of four wives, then why did Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) marry eleven wives? 34
7. Does Islam permit women to give divorce? 41
8. Why do Muslims call God, 'Allah'? 42
9. Can a Muslim greet with the Islamic greeting 'salaam' to a non-Muslim? 44
10. Are women allowed in the mosque? 45
11. If God is just then why are some people born healthy and some with defects; some people are born in rich families while others in poor families? 46
12. Why is Islam so rigid with the do's and the don'ts? 47
13. Does Islam allow a woman to be the head of a state? 48
14. Why can't Muslims marry non-Muslims? 49
15. Why do Muslims fast the entire month of Ramadan? 50
16. Why do Muslims follow the lunar calendar? 51
17. What does 'Jihad' mean in Islam? 52
18. Why does Islam degrade women with Hijab? 53
19. How can Islam be the religion of peace when it was spread by the sword? 60
20. Why do Muslims slaughter animals, in the way they do? 65
21. If Islam is against idol worship, why do the Muslims worship and bow down to the Kaaba in their prayer? 66

22. Why does Islam stress so much emphasis on cleanliness, and also especially when visiting the toilet?	67
23. Why are non-Muslims not allowed in the Muslim Holy Cities of Makkah and Madinah?	68
24. Why is pork forbidden in Islam?	69
25. Why is alcohol prohibited in Islam?	71
26. Why do women inherit only half of what a man inherits under Islamic Shariah?	76
27. How can a Muslim prove the existence of the hereafter, and what does the Qur'aan say is the reason for human beings existence?	78
28. As all Muslims follow the same Qur'aan then why are there so many sects?	79
29. All religions teach to do good deeds. Why should a person follow only Islam?	81
30. How can the Qur'aan say that Mary (pbuh) was the sister of Aaron when we know that Mary, the mother of Jesus (pbuh) lived about a thousand years after Aaron?	82
31. Is it true that your Qur'aan mentions in Chap 19 verse 33 that Jesus (pbuh) died and was resurrected?	83
32. The Qur'aan states Jesus (pbuh) is 'kalimatullah' (the word of Allah)"- and 'ruhullah' (the spirit of Allah). Is this not indicating his divinity?	84
33. What does Islam say about trinity?	90
34. Christians say the concept of "trinity" can be explained by giving the example that water can be present in three states, i.e. as solid e.g. ice, as liquid e.g. water and gas e.g. vapour, yet it is one and the same water.	93
35. According to Christians, Jesus (pbuh) obviously claimed divinity when he said: "I and my father are one."	94
36. Did Jesus (pbuh) claim divinity at the beginning of Gospel of John?	98
37. What is the Islamic perception of God or Allah?	103
38. What are the Islamic criteria to enter paradise?	104
39. The Bible says that Jesus is the "begotten son" of God.	105
40. Did Jesus (pbuh) claim divinity in John 14:6?	109

41. Does Islam believe in several gods as the Qur'aan uses the word 'WE' for God? 114
42. The Qur'aan says that Allah has put '*a seal on the hearts of the kuffaar*' and they will not believe. Science tells us that the brain is responsible for understanding and not the heart. Isn't the Qur'aan contradicting science? 115
43. The Qur'aan mentions in several places that the heavens and the earth were created in 6 days. In surah Fussilat if one adds up the number of days it comes to 8 days. Isn't this a contradiction? 115
44. At one place the Qur'aan mentions that man is created from sperm and in another it mentions that man is created from dust. Are these two verses not contradictory? 118
45. **Is Allah forgiving or revengeful?** 119
46. Why was it necessary for God to send so many Prophets to this world? And why is the name **Islam** specially chosen? 121
47. Why do Muslims claim they are more worthy followers of Jesus (pbuh)? 123
48. **Please explain "the original sin and also 'inherited sin'.** 125
49. **Christians claim the Bible of today is the word of God. Can that be proven?** 129
50. **Christians claim that there are no absurdities and contradictions in the Bible. Can you prove otherwise?** 136
51. **My Christian neighbour disputes that incest; violence and adultery are mentioned in the Bible.** 142
52. Arun Shourie says that in chap 4 verses 11 & 12 of the Qur'aan... 'If you add up the different parts of inheritance given to the heirs, the sum total is more than one. Can you please clarify? 144
53. **Who is greater? Jesus (pbuh) or Muhammed (pbuh).** 145
54. It is said in the Qur'aan that no one besides God knows the sex of the child in the mother's womb. Modern sciences can determine the sex of the child in the womb. How do you respond? 151
55. **Why is the crucifixion of Jesus rejected by Muslims?** 152
56. **Muslims say that in the Qur'aan the coming of Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) was foretold (prophesied) by Prophets Moses (pbuh) (O.T.) and Jesus (pbuh) (N.T.) in the Bible.**

Can you give us an indication of where this is stated in the Bible?	156
57. What do Muslims believe in, and can I become a Muslim?	177
58. Is not Hinduism the oldest and best religion?	179
59. If "Allah" is the correct name for God as is stated in the Qur'aan, then is "Allah" mentioned in other religious scriptures besides the Qur'aan?	181
60. According to Islam, messengers or prophets of Allah were sent to each and every nation of the world, then which prophet was sent to India? Can Ram and Krishna be messengers of God?	184
61. If Allah has sent His revelations in every period, then which revelation was sent to India? Are the Vedas and other Hindu scriptures to be the word of God?	185
62. Is it true that Hinduism forbids idol worship? Where is this stated in the Hindu scriptures?	187
63. Some people claim that the Qur'aan is anti Semitic. Comment please.	190
64. How is the Qur'aan the guardian of the previous scriptures, and what is the relation of the Qur'aan to earlier scriptures?	192
65. Is it true that a person is killed if he/she becomes apostate?	195

**IN THE NAME OF ALLAH, MOST GRACIOUS,
MOST MERCIFUL**

**Peace and salutations be on all the Prophets.
Adam, Nooh, (Noah) Yacub (Jacob) Isma'il, Ishaac (Isaac) Dawud
(David) Suleiman (Solomon) Musa (Moses) Isa (Jesus) and others,
and the last and final Prophet, Prophet Muhammed**

INTRODUCTION

All translations of the Qur'aan³ from Arabic⁴ to any other language will most definitely contain errors. *All translations of the Qur'aan*

3 The Qur'aan is the embodiment of truth personified. It does not deviate from the truth to the extent of a jot even though it is in the most beautiful rhythmic Arabic. It is the perfect witness, the most dynamic, complete and perfect revelation of Allah to all humanity for all time. The word Qur'aan appears seventy times in the Qur'aan.

cannot retain the genuine and perfect status, as the Qur'aan can only be original in Arabic, the language that it was revealed in. However, it can be tremendously helpful to anyone wanting to gain more knowledge about Islam. It is recommended to purchase a copy of the Qur'aan and use this application only as a means of reference. *In its natural revealed language, Arabic, the Qur'aan is the direct Word of Allah (God) to mankind through the Prophet Muhammed⁵ (pbuh).*

Da'wah⁶ is a binding duty on Muslims, because Islam is a universal religion meant for all mankind. ALLAH⁷ is the Creator of the entire 'Aalameen⁸, and Muslims have been entrusted with the duty of conveying His message to all of mankind. Sadly, most Muslims today have become neglectful towards this sacred duty! While accepting Islam as the best way of life for themselves, most are unwilling to share this knowledge with those to whom the message has not yet been conveyed.

In the early days of Islam, each and every Muslim sought guidance (knowledge⁹) directly from the Qur'aan. Not so the Muslims of this age, as they depend entirely on their learned men. They read the Qur'aan in Arabic, but look upon mere recitation as a meritorious act without trying to learn and understand the message of the Qur'aan and to act upon it. Muslims of today have reduced Islam to a cult, and consequently have fallen prey to dogmatism¹⁰ and ritualism. This ritualistic approach is responsible for their lack of understanding of

4 The Glorious Qur'aan is revealed in Arabic. One such verse is in: *Chapter 12 v.2: "Surely We have revealed it - an Arabic Qur'aan - that you may understand"*. The name of the Qur'aan and in which language the Qur'aan was revealed in, are both mentioned in the Glorious Qur'aan in the above verse. This statement "Arabic Qur'aan" is repeated more than a dozen times in the Qur'aan. *The Bible does not state in which language it was revealed in, neither the name Bible is mentioned in the Bible.*

5 **Muhammed** : "Means the praised one, praiseworthy, comforter, altogether lovely"

6 In the Islamic context Da'wah means- to propagate the teachings of the Qur'aan and the practical life style of the Prophet as recorded in the Sahih Hadith books

7 The proper name of God in Arabic. The Christian Arabs also use the name ALLAH.

8 Means everything that exists, seen and unseen

9 **Ilm** is an Arabic meaning knowledge. This word-**ilm**- appears **854 times in the Glorious Qur'aan**. In Islam it is an obligation on every person, **Muslim and non-Muslim, male and female** to gain *knowledge* so that one can make their own choice what one wants to believe in without any compulsion. It is important to read the scriptures of all religions so that one has *knowledge* of the different religions. Unfortunately, the non Muslims, *especially the Christians* have a deep rooted fear to read the Glorious Qur'aan because the priests have warned them not to. It is indeed a tragedy for their spiritual development and it will be to their loss in the hereafter.

10 Accepting without question and without proof

what Islam stands for. What they also fail to understand is that Da'wah is an *obligation* on each and every Muslim, and in order to convey the message of Islam to non-Muslims, dialogue and debate becomes inevitable.

"Let there be no compulsion in religion: Truth stands out clear from error: whoever rejects evil and believes in Allah has grasped the most trustworthy hand hold that never breaks; and Allah hears and knows all things". (Al-Qur'aan Chap 2.v.256)

"Invite (all) to the way of thy Lord, with wisdom and beautiful preaching, and argue with them in ways that are best and most gracious!" (Al-Qur'aan Chap 16.v.125)

"And who is better in speech than one who calls to Allah and does good, and says: I am surely of those who submit"? Q. Chap 41.v.33.

The duty of conveying the message of Islam¹¹ is a duty upon all Muslims as Allah warns in the Glorious Qur'aan: **"Say-If it be that your fathers, your sons, your brothers, your mates, or your kindred; the wealth that you have gained (and amassed); the commerce in which you fear a decline; or your dwellings in which you take delight are dearer to you than Allah or His messenger, or the striving in His cause; then wait until Allah brings about His decision; and Allah guides not the rebellious". (Q. Chap 9 v. 24)**

When inviting non-Muslims to Islam it is also a duty to inform them that we as Muslims are not responsible for them whether they accept or reject the message. There is no compulsion whatsoever!

Allah mentions to the Prophet in the Glorious Qur'aan:

{"...thy (O Muhammed) duty is only to deliver the message. And Allah is Seer of the servants. Q-Chap 3 v 20}-{"Arise (O Muhammed) and deliver your warning!" Q-Chap 74 v 2}-{"You (O Muhammed) are no other than a warner." Q-Chap 35 v 23}

{"If it had been thy Lord's will, they would have all believed, - all who were on earth! Will thou then compel mankind, against their will to believe? Glorious Qur'aan Chap 10 verses 99}-{"... And We have not sent thee as being in charge of them" Chapter 17 v. 54}

{"Then if they turn away, thy duty is only clear deliverance (of the message)". Qur'aan. Chap. 16 v. 82}-{"It may be thou (O Prophet)

¹¹ Refer also to the Glorious Qur'aan chap 61, verses 9 to 14

will kill thyself with grief¹², that they do not become Believers".
Qur'aan. Chapter 26. v. 3}

As Muslims are the followers of the Prophet it is an obligation now on the Muslims to also convey the message of Islam to non-Muslims. In conveying the message of Islam to non-Muslims, it is generally not sufficient to highlight only the positive nature of Islam. Most non-Muslims are not convinced about the truth of Islam because there are questions in their minds about Islam that remain unanswered. It is preferable to ask them what they find wrong with Islam, and then to address their questions directly. Logical replies to their questions can convince the majority of non-Muslims.

Misconceptions due to media

The common misconceptions about Islam arise in the minds of the majority of non-Muslims because they are constantly being bombarded with Islamaphobia (*premeditated misinformation about Islam*). International media is in the main controlled by the non-Muslim world, whether it is international satellite channels, radio stations, newspapers, magazines or books. The internet has become a powerful medium of information, and sadly one finds a huge amount of *virulent propaganda against Islam on the internet all of which is untrue*.

Knowledge on comparative religion is imperative

For any person sincerely seeking the truth, a study of comparative religion is the starting point. To study the **AUTHENTIC SCRIPTURES** of a religion is the best way to know the true teachings of that religion. Muslims make up 20% of the world population. Non-Muslims work, interact and live as neighbours with Muslims. For non-Muslims it is important to discover the beliefs of Muslims from authentic sources, and not from newspapers and magazines, as these are not authentic sources to gain knowledge of about Islam. The best means is to go to the authentic source of Islam, which is the Glorious Qur'aan.

12. This verse gives us an insight into the anxiety, which the Holy Prophet had on account of a fallen humanity, an anxiety so great that he is spoken of here as *'almost killing himself with grief'*. His was a life of absolute devotion to the cause of humanity; his only concern being that man should rise to the true dignity for which God had made him. This anxiety was not only for those who were directly addressed by him, but, as the context shows, it was as deep for those who attributed a son to the Divine Being, and whom outward finery was to mislead to such an extent as to make them strangers to spiritual truth.

To the Christians I pose the question: Have you really read your Bible from cover to cover? If not, then now is the time to do it, so that you can verify the references contained in this book.

To the Muslims I pose the question: Have you read the Qur'aan with understanding so that you can convey the proper message of Islam to your non-Muslim friends and colleagues? If you have not, then it is time to do so now!

"Despite your religious or non-religious attitudes, the Holy Qur'aan is a boon to your intellectual and moral strength. Even if you are not concerned with moral issues, then pamper your intellectual curiosity and read the Qur'aan. The greater the level of your education, in any field, or the greater your social or political standing in your community, the more reason why you should procure your own copy of the Book and begin to read it".

"Nothing, but nothing, is left ambiguous or unanswered. It is a Book of Law interwoven in morality till it touches every facet of the human experience. It includes politics, economics, moral behaviour, personal cleanliness and propriety, inter-family relationships, bequests and inheritance, inter-religious respect and tolerance, charity, the sin of taking and of giving commercial interest, the importance of prayer, the belief in ONE GOD, religious-sociology and oneness of humankind. Bring any manner or word, concept or subject matter to mind and you will find, not only a reference to such a matter, but a treatise, succinctly and poignantly illustrating, advising, illuminating and directing". "In Defence of Jihad" Attorney: Mr. Archie Augustine from Estcourt, K.Z. Natal (Roman Catholic)

CHAPTER ONE

Common Questions asked by non-Muslims about Islam

1. Question: IS IT NOT TRUE THAT PROPHET MUHAMMED (PBUH) COPIED THE QUR'AAN FROM THE BIBLE?

Answer: Let me begin by saying that no human beings life has been so well documented and preserved as that of the Prophet of Islam. From his birth to his death, his life has been recorded in detail for posterity!

Some critics allege that Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) learnt it from other human sources or plagiarized (copied) it from previous Scriptures. Some pagans accused the prophet of learning the Qur'aan from a Roman (Christian) blacksmith, who lived at the outskirts of Makkah, as the Prophet sometimes went to watch him at his work.

Just one verse revealed in the Qur'aan was sufficient to dismiss this malicious charge - **"We know indeed that they say, 'It is a man that teaches him,' -the tongue of him they wickedly point to is notably foreign, while this is Arabic, pure and clear."** (*Al-Qur'aan 16:103*)

How could a person whose mother tongue was foreign, and who could hardly speak broken Arabic be the source of the Qur'aan, which is the most powerful, incomparable pure Arabic? To believe that a Roman blacksmith taught the Prophet the Arabic Qur'aan is somewhat similar to believing that a Chinese immigrant to England, who could not speak proper English, taught Shakespeare the works he wrote.

What these enemies of Islam deliberately ignore is that the Qur'aan was hand-written¹³ by the scribe of Prophet in the Prophet's presence as it was being revealed to him bit-by-bit¹⁴ over a span of 23 years.¹⁵ After the Prophet's demise, his close companions had four copies of the Qur'aan hand written from the **Original Arabic One** (*from the one that the Prophet had verified personally*) and sent to the different corners of the Islamic Empire. *Two of the Qur'aans are still intact and are in existence today.* One is in the Topkapi Palace Museum in Istanbul, (Turkey) and the other is in Tashkent¹⁶ (Uzbekistan). **The United Nations has verified the authenticity of the Qur'aan in Tashkent with a certificate that is displayed next to the glass cabinet in which the Qur'aan is kept.** Many Christian historians have also testified to the authenticity of the Qur'aan as being authentic as it was revealed to the prophet 1,400 years ago. Among them is - **Mr. William Muir, a staunch critic of Islam** who testified to the originality and authenticity of the Qur'aan in the *18th century* by comparing the original to the copies that were used in his time. They are exactly the same even today in every letter!

13. The word Qur'aan is an infinitive noun from the root *qara'a*, meaning primarily, *he collected together*, and also *to read or recite*. "The Reading" was revealed orally to the Prophet through the angel Gabriel. The Prophet ordered it to be written down by his scribe in his presence and asked the scribe to read it back to him for verification.

14. Exactly as foretold in Isaiah 28:10-11: **"For precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to his people."** (*many more prophecies of Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) are foretold in Isaiah chap :21 vs. 7,13,15,16, chap 29 v12; chap 60 vs. 1-22. These prophecies fit only the personality of Prophet Muhammed as explained further on- refer to question 56.*

15. **The Qur'aan bears testimony of its revelation in bits at a time -in Chap 25 v 32**

16. The compiler has been to Uzbekistan and has seen the one in Tashkent personally in December 2000. The certificate of authenticity by UNESCO is next to the Qur'aan.

Waraqah ibn-Naufal

Prophet Muhammed's (pbuh) contact with the Jewish and Christian Scholars were very limited. The most prominent Arab Christian known to him was an old blind man called Waraqa ibn-Naufal who was a relative of the Prophet's first wife, Lady Khadijah (r.a.). Although of Arab descent, he was a convert to Christianity and was very well versed in the *true teachings of Jesus (pbuh)*¹⁷. The Prophet met him twice: once when Waraqa was worshipping at the Kaaba (*before the Prophetic Mission*) and Waraqa kissed the Prophet's forehead affectionately; and the second occasion was when Lady Khatijah (r.a) took the Prophet to Waraqa¹⁸ after he received the first revelation. When Waraqa heard from the Prophet the 5 verses of Surah Alaq, (*the very first verses of revelation*) he declared his belief that the heavenly messenger, the Arch Angel Gabriel who had come to Moses (pbuh) and Jesus (pbuh) of old time had come to Muhammed (pbuh), and that he was chosen as the Prophet of his people. He went on to say that he would do everything in his power to assist the Prophet in his mission, and predicted that the Prophet would be forced to migrate from Makkah in the not too distant future. **Waraqah died three years later, 10 years prior to the Hijrah**¹⁹.

The revelation of the Glorious Qur'aan continued unabated for a period of 23 years until it reached completion. It is perverse for anyone to assume that Waraqa was the source of the contents of the Qur'aan when he died just 3 years after the Qur'aan was in its beginning stages of revelation, and the revelation of the Qur'aan continued for another 20 years after Waraqa's demise!

Jews and Christians

The Prophet had religious discussions with the Jews and Christians when he was the de facto head of Madinah. These talks took place in Madinah more than 13 years after the revelation of the Qur'aan had begun. A good portion of the Qur'aan was revealed by then. The allegation that these Jews and Christians were the source is also perverse, since in these discussions Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) was performing the roles of an educator and a preacher, and was inviting them to accept Islam and pointing out that they had deviated from the true teachings of Jesus (pbuh) and Moses (pbuh) of which

17. Belief in Monotheism. *Every Prophet taught the Oneness of God*

18. Waraqa was at an advanced age - an old man already

19. Hijrah: Prophet's migration to Madina because of the intense persecution of the Muslims by the kuffar (pagans) of Makkah

Monotheism is the foundation. Many of these Jews²⁰ and Christians later embraced Islam.

The Prophet made only three trips abroad.

All historical records prove that Muhammed (pbuh) made only three trips outside of Makkah before his Prophethood:

1st trip: At the *age of 9* he accompanied his mother, Aminah to Madinah.

2nd trip: At the *age of about 10*, he accompanied his uncle, Abu-Talib on a business trip to Syria.

3rd trip: At the *age of 25²¹* he led Lady Khadija's Caravan to Syria on a trade trip.

It is extremely imaginary to assume that the Qur'aan of over 6,000 verses resulted from the occasional chats and meetings with the Christians or Jews from any of the above three trips. *In two of the trips he was still a minor.*

Prophet's life was an open book.

The day-to-day life of the Prophet was an open book for all to observe. On many occasions portions of the Revelation of the Qur'aan came while the Prophet was in the company of his companions; and they at once noticed a marked change that came over him, as sweat would pour out on his forehead whilst he received the Revelation. Thereafter the Prophet would recite the revelation without delay to all present and order the scribe to write it down, and then to read it back to him for verification. The prominent Quraish chiefs and aristocracy who accepted the message of Islam were wise and intelligent men. **They would have certainly noticed something amiss in the 23 years of the Prophetic mission.** The enemies of the Prophet also kept a close watch on him in order to try and disprove his claim as a prophet (astagfirullah) – yet they could not point out even a single instance when the Prophet may have had a secret rendezvous with any Jews and / or Christians.

It is incredible that any human author of the Qur'aan would have accepted a situation in which he received no credit whatsoever for

20.The most prominent being *Abdullah bin Salaam, a Jewish rabbi* who was very well versed in their scriptures and recognised him by the descriptions mentioned in their scriptures. Some of the descriptions are mentioned in answer # 55 with the appropriate references from the Bible (O.T. & N.T.)

21.This was 15 years before he was granted Prophethood

originating the Qur'aan. Thus, historically and logically it can by no means be proven that there was a human source for the Qur'aan.

Muhummed was an unlearned person

The theory that Muhammed (pbuh) authored the Qur'aan or copied from other sources can be disproved by the single historical fact: **He was an ummi (illiterate / unlearned) person**²². Allah testifies of this Himself in the Glorious Qur'aan in Surah Al-Ankabut:

"And thou was not able to recite a Book before this (Book), nor art thou able to transcribe it with thy right hand: in that case, indeed, would the talkers of vanities have doubted." (Al-Qur'aan 29:48)

Allah knew that many would doubt the authenticity of the Qur'aan and would ascribe it to Prophet Muhammed (pbuh). Therefore Allah in His Divine Wisdom chose the last and final Messenger to be an '**Ummi**', i.e. unlettered, so that the talkers of vanity would not have the slightest justification to doubt the Prophet when he recited the Revelation. The allegation of his enemies that he had copied the Qur'aan from other sources and rehashed it all in a beautiful language may have carried some weight if he was literate, but even this flimsy pretence has been deprived to the unbelievers and the cynics. Allah states in the Qur'aan:

"Those who follow the Messenger-Prophet, the *Ummi*, whom they find mentioned in the Torah and the Gospel. He enjoins them good and forbids them evil, and makes lawful to them the good things and prohibits for them impure things, and removes from them their burden and the shackles which were on them. So those who believe in him and honour him and help him, and follow the light which has been sent down with him – these are the successful. Say: O mankind, surely I am the Messenger of Allah to you all, of Him, Whose is the kingdom of the heavens and the earth. There is no god but He; He gives life and causes death. So believe in Allah and His Messenger, the *Ummi* Prophet who believes in Allah and His words, and follow him so that you may be guided aright". (Chap 7:vs.157-158)²³

From the Qur'aan (*also known as the Furqaan*) we can *decipher* that the prophecy of the coming of the unlettered Prophet is clearly mentioned in the *Old Testament in Isaiah 29:12*: **"And the book is delivered to**

22. It is also mentioned in Surah Al-Jumu'a- chap 62, verse 2, that the Prophet was an "ummi" i.e. illiterate/ unlearned person.

23. The Prophet's teacher was the Creator Himself!

him that is not learned, saying, Read this, I pray thee: and he saith, I am not learned".

Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) was born in 570 of the C.E and died in 633 C.E. In his entire lifetime there was no Arabic version of the Bible in existence. The Christian missionaries²⁴ deliberately overlook this very important fact that the Arabic version of the Bible was never in existence during the entire lifetime of Prophet Muhammed. The earliest Arabic version of the Old Testament is that of R. Saadias Gaon of 900 C.E. - more than 260 years after the death of our beloved Prophet. Only in 1616 C.E. Erpenius published the oldest Arabic version of the New Testament - almost a thousand years after the demise of our Prophet. (Refer to Mr. Ebrahim's analysis chap 6 - Compiler)

Similarities in the Qur'aan and the Bible is due to a common source

Similarities between the Qur'aan and the Bible do not necessarily mean that the former has been copied from the latter. **In fact it gives evidence that both of them are based on an original (common) third source as all divine revelations came from the same source - from One God.** No matter what human changes were introduced into these Judeo-Christian and other religious scriptures that have distorted and corrupted their originality, there are some areas that have remained free from major interpolations and are thus common.

"None of Our revelations²⁵ do We abrogate or cause to be forgotten but We substitute something better or similar"²⁶. Qur'aan- 2 v 106

That is why there are some parallels between the Qur'aan and the Bible as further proof that the revelation of the Glorious Qur'aan is from Almighty Allah; and it is perverse to accuse Muhammed of copying anything from the Bible. The same logic would then also be applicable to the teachings of Christianity, and thus one could wrongly claim that Jesus was not a genuine Prophet (God forbid) and that he simply copied from the Old Testament. There are many sayings of Jesus recorded in the Bible that refer time and again to the Law of Moses (pbuh) which again proves that Jesus (pbuh) received

24. The trend today is to train YOUNG PRETTY WOMEN dressed in Islamic garb to attack Islam. They always begin with a sob story- e.g. She was married to a Muslim; how he mistreated her, and then goes on to misquote the Qur'aan and Hadiths. The missionaries should take note of this warning in the *Qur'aan. Chap 16: 88: "Those who disbelieve and hinder (others) from Allah's way, We will add chastisement to their chastisement because they made mischief"*.

25. Referring to the previous scriptures that were revealed to Moses & Jesus (pbuh)

26. For full explanation on abrogation see answer to question number 4

revelation from the common third source i.e. God; just as Muhammed (pbuh) received revelation from the same source i.e. Allah. *The similarities signify a common source and the continuation of the basic message of monotheism*²⁷:

“Closer and closer to mankind comes their reckoning; yet they heed not and turn away. Never comes (aught) to them of a renewed message²⁸ from their Rabb²⁹, but they listen to it as in jest...”
Qur’aan Chap 21 vs. 1-2

“HE has revealed to thee (Muhammed) the Book with truth, Verifying that which is before it, and He revealed at-Taurât and al-Injîl aforetime, a guidance for the people, and He sent al-Furqân³⁰ (*the Criterion*). Those who disbelieve in the messages of Allâh - for them is a severe chastisement. And Allâh is Mighty, the Rabb of retribution.” (*Glorious Qur’aan Chap 3:v.3*)

Ch 41, v, 43, Qur’aan -“Naught is said unto thee (Muhammed) save what was said unto the messengers before thee. Lo! Thy Lord is owner of forgiveness and owner (also) of dire punishment”.

Chap 5, v. 47- “It was We Who revealed the Law (to Moses); therein was guidance and light...”³¹

Glorious Qur’aan Chap 32, v. 23- “We did aforetime give the Book to Moses: be not then in doubt of it’s reaching (thee); and we made it a guide to the Children of Israel”.

Glorious Qur’aan Chap 4, verse 136- “O ye who believe! Believe in Allah and His Apostle, and the Scripture which He has sent to His apostle and the Scripture which He sent to those³² before (him) and whoso denies Allah, His angels, His Books, His apostles and the Day of Judgement, has gone far, far astray”.

“But there comes not to them a newly revealed Message from the Most Gracious, but they turn away therefrom. They have indeed

27. Paul corrupted the teaching of Jesus (pbuh) who preached Monotheism.

28 The Glorious Qur’aan states that this Qur’aan is **a renewed message to mankind**.

29 RABB means: LORD of all creation - angels, jinn, human beings and everything that exists, seen and unseen. According to ar-Râghîb al-Isfahânî Rabb also means: **“One Who fosters a thing in such a manner as to make it attain one condition after another until it reaches its goal of completion as He wills”.**

30 **Furqaan**-Title of the Glorious Qur’aan, which deciphers truth from falsehood

31 The same message is repeated in the Glorious Qur’aan in chap 73 v. 15 & 16 and in many other verses. The message is from the same source i.e. **Allah!**

32 The previous Prophets

rejected the (Message): so they will know soon (enough) the truth of what they mocked at". (*Chap 26 vs. 5-6*)

"Those who deny Allah and His apostles³³, and (those who) wish to separate Allah from His apostles, saying: "We believe in some but reject others": and (those who) wish to take a course midway- they are in truth unbelievers; and Allah has prepared for the unbelievers a humiliating punishment". (*Glorious Qur'aan- chap 4, vs.150-151*)

Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) gave due respect and credit to all the previous Prophets in his hadiths. He has stated that all the Prophets form one brotherhood, as they were all given the same basic message to give to their followers.

Four revelations from Allah are mentioned by name in the Qur'aan:

- (1) **At-Taurah**, the *Law* to Moses (pbuh)
- (2) **As-Zaboor**, the *Psalms* to David (pbuh)
- (3) **Al-Injeel**, the *Good News*³⁴ to Jesus (pbuh)
- (4) **Al-Qur'aan**, the last and final revelation given to the last and final Messenger of Allah, Muhammed (pbuh)

It is an article of faith for every Muslim to believe³⁵ in all the Prophets of God, and all revelations of God as stated above in chap 4, vs. 150-151 and chap 3, vs. 84-85 below:

"Say (O Muhammed): We believe in Allah and that which is revealed unto us and that which was revealed unto Abraham and Ishmael and Isaac and Jacob and the tribes, and that which was vouchsafed unto Moses and Jesus³⁶ and the Prophets from their Lord. We make no distinction between any one of them, and unto Allah we have bowed our will (in Islam). If anyone desires a religion other than Islam (submission to Allah), never will it be

33 *Chap 3 v.81- "And when Allah made a covenant through the prophets: Certainly what I have given you of Book and Wisdom – then a Messenger comes to you verifying that which is with you, you shall believe in him, and you shall aid him. He said: Do you affirm and accept My compact in this (matter)? They said: We do affirm. He said: Then bear witness, and I (too) am of the bearers of witness with you".*

34 The Good News refers to the coming of Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) as time and again Jesus (pbuh) mentioned that '**he will glorify me, he will lead you to all truth, he will not speak of himself, but whatsoever he will hear**' etc.

35 A similar message is stated in chap 2, v 285

36 Both these great Prophets taught the revelations ORALLY to their followers. Both of them NEVER ordered their followers to write down their teachings at any time in their presence for verification. Moses was given the Law inscribed in the Tablets as stated in the *Qur'aan-chap 7, verse 154- however they are lost forever.*

accepted of him; and in the hereafter he will be in the ranks of those who have lost (all spiritual good)". (Al Qur'aan. Chap 3 vs. 84 & 85)

The present day Bible (Old & New Testaments) may contain fragments of the word of God, but to claim that the present day Bibles (and there are dozens of versions) are revelations is deceptive!

All four of the main Gospels of the Bible begin with: "The Gospel according to", which signify it is only an assumption that it was written by that person. *In other words the Church attributes an assumed gospel to God without 100% confirmation.* Furthermore, all four Gospel writers have no second name. Just only: Mark, Luke, John and Matthew. For 2,000 years they still have not found out the persons father's names or family names. *Extraordinary!* Yet these same Gospel writers (Mark etc) give Jesus sixty-six in one instance, and over forty fathers and grandfathers in the Bible. Surely they must have had fathers, so what were their fathers' names?

Regarding the Glorious Arabic Qur'aan, it is 100% the Verbatim Word of the Almighty³⁷. The Qur'aan presents all the Prophets of Allah as being of excellent and beautiful character and as belonging to one single brotherhood as all had a similar prophetic mission, and the same fundamental message of *M Finally, the compiler makes an earnest doa to Allah, The Most Kind and Most Merciful to accept this work for the propagation of His deen, and to forgive all those who were involved in this work. Ameen.*

MONOTHEISM - GOD is One and only One, *without a son, or partner or consort.* That is why the fundamental teachings of the major faiths can NEVER be contradictory, even though thousands of years passed between the different prophetic missions. The Qur'aan states unequivocally that the differences that exists between various religions are not the responsibility of the Prophets, but of the followers of these Prophets, who forgot part of what they had been taught, or deliberately misinterpreted, interpolated and corrupted the scriptures. (*Qur'aan Chap 3 verse 187.*)

"And remember Allah took a Covenant³⁸ from the People of the Book, to make it known and made clear to mankind, and not to hide

37 For irrefutable proof on this read Chap 5, in this book by Dr. Zakir Naik

38 In the revelation -*At Tuarat*- vouchsafed to Moses, the Prophet Muhammed is mentioned by name as well as his characteristics. The Jews have deliberately kept this hidden from the rest of mankind, and by this action of non compliance they have broken the Covenant with God which made it obligatory on them to announce the name of Prophet Muhammed (pbuh), the last messenger to come. Out of sheer jealousy

it, but they threw it away behind their backs, and purchased³⁹ with it some miserable gain! And vile was the bargain they made!

The Qur'aan cannot therefore be seen as a scripture that competes with the teachings of Moses and Jesus (pbut) and the other Prophets. *On the contrary, the Qur'aan confirms that the previous Prophets were given scripture, but the difference is that the Qur'aan completes and perfects the message*, which was not the case of the previous revelations.

The Qur'aan is also known as the Furqaan. The original word is *furq*, an infinitive noun from the root *farq*, which signifies the making of distinction between two things, and according to Edward William Lane's Arabic-English Lexicon, *'is anything that makes a separation or distinction between truth and falsity, and hence it signifies a proof or demonstration and also aid or victory'*.

Another significant point to note is that **if** the Prophet had written the Qur'aan himself, would he reprimand himself in his own book? There are a few places in the Glorious Qur'aan that reminds⁴⁰ the Prophet for his oversight.

and hatred of the Ishmaelites they have sown with their own hands their own destruction in the hereafter. The Christians have done exactly the same by translating the name of Muhammed to 'altogether lovely', 'Paraclete', and 'comforter' and so on! **However in the Hebrew text in the Song of Solomon chap 5 v. 16 the name of Prophet Muhammed appears as MUHAMMEDIM:** The im is the plural of respect in the eastern languages as will be explained in Question 41.

39 Refer Qur'aan Chap 2 v 79

40 We quote 3 of them: (1). the prophet had forgotten to say "God willing" on one occasion and he was reminded of this oversight in *Chap 18 v 23 & 24 - "And say not of anything: I will do that tomorrow, unless Allah please. And remember thy Lord when thou forgettest..."* (2) The Prophet was busy inviting some chiefs to Islam and a blind person came to the Prophet. *Chap 80 v 1 to 10 - "He frowned and turned away, because the blind man came to him, and what would make thee know that he might purify himself, or be mindful, so the Reminder should profit him? As for him who considers himself free from need to him thou dost attend. And no blame is on thee, if he purifies himself not. And as to him who comes to thee striving hard and he fears - to him thou payest no regard"*. The blind man was Ibn Umm Maktum who came to the Holy Prophet while he was explaining the message of Islam to an assembly of the leaders of the Quraish and, interrupting, he asked to be taught what Allah had revealed to him. The Holy Prophet frowned at the interruption and turned away from him and continued to speak to the others. Immediately this verse was revealed reminding the Prophet of even this unintentional oversight. *This incident shows that the source of the Holy Prophet's revelation was other than his own mind.* The Prophet's inattention to an intruder, while he had not yet finished his conversation, was quite natural. He did not chide the intruder for his interruption, but only disliked it and gave him no answer, as the words of the Qur'aan plainly show. Hence the source from which the Holy Prophet received his

Scientific comparison between the Qur'aan and Bible

If one peruses through the Bible and the Qur'aan one may find several points *that appear* to be the same in both of them. Only based on historical details it is difficult for someone who is neither conversant with Christianity and Islam to come to a firm decision as to which of the scriptures is true; *but when you analyse logically and scrutinize them closely, using scientific knowledge, then one will decipher the truth and will realise that there is such a huge difference between them, that one can equate it as: "the difference is as vast as the distance between heaven and earth"*. The facts as stated in the glorious Qur'aan are consistent with the latest scientific discoveries, whereas the Bible's are totally inconsistent with science and can be classed as fiction!

LET US EXAMINE SOME OF THEM.

Creation of the Universe in Six Days

As per the Bible, in the first book of Genesis in Chap 1, it states: the universe was created in six days, and each day is defined as a twenty-four hours period. The Qur'aan mentions that the universe was created in six 'Ay'yaams'- this Arabic word has two meanings: firstly, it means a day, and secondly, it also means a stage, period or epoch, which is a very long period of time.

When the Qur'aan mentions that the universe was created in six 'Ay'yaams', it refers to the creation of the heavens and the earth in *six long periods or epochs*; and scientists have no objection to this statement. The creation of the universe has taken billions of years, which disproves and contradicts the concept of the Bible that states

revelation was outside his own heart or his own inclinations. (3) *Q. Chap. 66 v.1: "O Prophet, why dost thou forbid (thyself) that which Allah has made awful for thee? Seekest thou to please thy wives? And Allah is Forgiving, Merciful"*.

This incident is narrated by 'A'ishah (ra): "The Holy Prophet used to take honey at Zainab's house, and Hafsa and I agreed to tell the Prophet that he smelled as if he had taken *Maghafir*" (something that had a bad odour). The Holy Prophet, accepting their word, solemnly promised that he would take honey no more. Thereafter this verse was revealed to the Prophet not to forbid was has been permitted - i.e. honey - by Allah. Taking the above examples, can any reasonable person still believe that the Prophet was the author of the Qur'aan?

Note: At the Jesus seminar in America in 1993, it was concluded that - **"82% of the words ascribed to Jesus in the gospels were not actually spoken by him."** *Britannica, 12th edition; vol.3, page 643*

that the creation of the Universe took six days of twenty-four hour durations each.

Sun Created after the Day

The Bible states in chap 1, verses 3 to 5 of Genesis: the phenomenon of day and night was created on the 1st day of creation of the Universe by God. In Genesis chap 1, vs. 14 - 19 stars were created on the fourth day. It is illogical to mention the light, the phenomenon of day and night, was created on the first day of Creation when the cause or source of the light was created three days later. Moreover the existence of evening and morning as elements of a single day is only conceivable after the creation of the earth and its rotation around the sun. Scientists tell us that the light circulating in the universe is the result of a complex reaction in the stars.

In contrast with the contents of the Bible on this issue, the Qur'aan does not give any unscientific sequence of Creation. Hence it is absolutely wrong to say that Prophet Muhammed copied the passages pertaining to the creation of the universe from the Bible but missed out this illogical, wrong and absurd sequence of the Bible.

Creation of the Sun, the Earth and the Moon

According to the Bible, Genesis, chap 1, verses 9 to 13, the earth was created on the third day, and as per verses 14 to 19, the sun and the moon were created on the fourth day. *Scientists tell us that the earth and the moon emanated from their original star, the Sun.* Hence to place the creation of the sun and the moon after the creation of the earth is contrary to the established facts about the formation of the solar system. According to the Bible, Genesis, chap 1, vs. 11-13, vegetation was created on the third day along with seed-bearing grasses, plants and trees; and further on as per verses 14-19, the sun was created on the fourth day. How is it scientifically possible for the vegetation to have appeared without the presence of the sun, as has been stated in the Bible?

If Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) was indeed the author of the Qur'aan and had copied its contents from the Bible as the enemies of the Prophet claim, then how did he manage to avoid the unscientific errors in the Bible? There are dozens of unscientific facts in the Bible that are incompatible with science. *On the other hand the Qur'aan*

*does not contain any statements that are conflicting with the latest scientific discoveries*⁴¹.

The Sun and the Moon both emit light according to the Bible in Genesis, chap 1, v, 16: "And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night". Science has established today that the moon does not have its own light. *This confirms the Qur'aanic idea that the light of the moon is a reflected light as mentioned in chap 25 v 61.* For anyone to imagine that 1,400 years ago Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) corrected these scientific errors of the Bible, and then copied such corrected passages into the Qur'aan is perverse.

According to the Bible, Adam, the first man on earth lived 5,800 years ago. As per the genealogy of Jesus given in the Bible, from Jesus through Abraham to the first man on earth Adam, is approximately 5,800 years ago: 1,948 years between Adam and Abraham approximately 1,800 years between Abraham and Jesus 2,000 years from Jesus till today (pbut all).

There is sufficient evidence from archaeological and anthropological sources to suggest that the first human beings on earth were present tens of thousands of years ago; and yet on the other hand the Bible suggests merely 5,800 years ago. The Qur'aan also speaks about Adam as the first man on earth, but it does not suggest any date or period of his life on earth, whereas what the Bible says in this regard is totally incompatible with science.

Noah and the flood⁴²

The Biblical description of the flood in Genesis chaps 6 to 8 indicate that the deluge was **universal** and it destroyed every living thing on earth, except those present with Noah in the Ark. The description suggests that the event took place 1,656 years after the creation of Adam or 292 years before the birth of Abraham at a time when Noah was 600 years old. Thus the flood may have occurred in the 21st or 22nd Century B.C.

41 Scientists are discovering new secrets of the solar system and other disciplines of science by referring to the Qur'aan for guidance, and each discovery is in harmony with the facts stated in the Qur'aan.

42 Christian missionaries claim that the whole world was immersed under water, but that is incorrect. Scientists have proved this statement of the Bible wrong!

This story of the flood, as given in the Bible contradicts scientific evidence and facts from archaeological sources, which indicate that the 11th Dynasty in Egypt and the 3rd Dynasty in Babylonia were in existence during the period of the time of the flood without any break in civilization, and in a manner totally unaffected by any major calamity which may have occurred in the 21st century B.C. Today the scientific data contradicts the Biblical story that the whole world had been immersed in the floodwater. In contrast to this, the Qur'aanic presentation of the story of Noah and the flood does not conflict with scientific evidence or archaeological data; because firstly, the Qur'aan does not indicate any specific date or year of the occurrence of that event, *and secondly, and more importantly, according to the Qur'aan, the flood was a localised event only involving the people of Noah.* Look at any idol-worshipping nation; take the Hindus for example, and you find the same names of idols going on through thousands of years. And yet Arabia was not more distantly situated from the territory of Noah's people than are any two parts of India from each other.

Glorious Qur'aan Chap 71:25 : "Because of their wrongs they were drowned, and then made to enter Fire, so they found no helpers besides Allah".

The Qur'aan refers to the evil people of Noah's time only that were drowned and not the entire humanity of the world as the Bible claims. *In fact the Qur'aan specifically mentions that it was not a universal phenomenon that destroyed complete life on earth.* So it is irrational to assume that Prophet Muhammed had plagiarized the story of the flood from the Bible and corrected the mistakes before mentioning it in the Qur'aan.

Moses (pbuh) and Pharaoh of the Exodus

The story of Moses (pbuh) and the Pharaoh of the Exodus seem the same in the Qur'aan and the Bible. Both scriptures agree that the Pharaoh drowned when he tried to pursue Moses (pbuh) and led the Israelites across a stretch of water that they crossed to safety. However, the Qur'aan gives an additional piece of information that the Bible does not have, in *Surah Yunus (Jonah)*:

"This day We shall save thee in thy body, that thou mayest be a sign to those who come after thee! But verily, many among mankind are heedless of Our Signs!" (Al-Qur'aan 10:92)

Dr. Maurice Bucaille, after thorough research proved that although Rameses II was known to have persecuted the Israelites as per the Bible, he actually died while Moses (pbuh) was taking refuge in Median. Rameses II's son Merneptah who succeeded him as Pharaoh, drowned during the exodus. In 1898, the mummified body of Merneptah was found in the valley of Kings in Egypt. In 1975, Dr. Maurice Bucaille with other doctors received permission to examine the Mummy of Merneptah, the findings of which proved that Merneptah probably died from drowning or a violent shock that immediately preceded the moment of drowning. Thus the Qur'aanic verse- **"that We shall save thee in thy body as a sign"** has been fulfilled by the Pharaoh's body being kept at the Royal Mummies room in the Egyptian Museum in Cairo.

This verse of the Qur'aan compelled Dr. Maurice Bucaille, who was a Christian, to study the Qur'aan. He later wrote a book 'The Bible, Qur'aan and Science', and confessed that the author of the Qur'aan can be none other than God Himself (Allah). Thus he embraced Islam and became a Muslim.

Qur'aan⁴³ is a Revelation from Allah

The above evidences are sufficient to conclude that the Qur'aan was not copied from the Bible, but that the **Qur'aan is the Furqaan - 'the Criterion'** to judge the factual from the bogus, and to weed out all the interpolations, additions, fabrications and deletions in the Bible and Torah, which the false scribes wrote. In this way the Qur'aan deciphers which portions of the Bible **possibly** can be considered as the Word of God, and to reject those parts⁴⁴ that contain untruths through interpolations. The Qur'aan testifies: **"Alif Laam Meem. (this is) the revelation of the Book in which there is no doubt⁴⁵- from the Lord of the Worlds. Or do they say, 'He has forged it'? Nay, it is the Truth from thy Lord, that thou mayest admonish a people to whom**

43 The Qur'aan is also called '*Kareem*' on account of the benefit that it has brought to humanity, and hence it is bounteous or bountiful. *Q. V. 78 of chap 56* speaks of the Qur'aan as being protected, by which is meant not only that it will be protected against all attempts to destroy it, but also that it will be protected in all its purity in writing.

44 Most of the Bible has been corrupted, and this fact is accepted by the majority of Christian Scholars without reservations- see comments by the Scholars in this book

45 No Holy Book of any religion has such a statement in it that claims that **'THERE IS NO DOUBT IN IT'**. Only the Glorious Qur'aan can make this claim as it is the verbatim word of Allah.

no warner has come before thee: in order that they may receive guidance." (Al-Qur'aan 32:vs.1-3.)

Another miracle of the Qur'aan⁴⁶ that is **intentionally overlooked by the enemies of Islam** is that it is the only Scripture revealed by the Almighty Allah that can be memorized completely by a child of six years old or an adult of eighty years old. Today there are *more than fifty million (50,000,000) Muslims of all nations* who have memorized the Glorious Qur'aan. The Furqaan deciphers from the Old Testament the saying of *Jeremiah, Chap 31 verse 33* wherein it states about the revelation of the Glorious Qur'aan: "**...I will put my law⁴⁷ in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people**".

It is an added miracle of the Glorious Qur'aan that it is not necessary to be an Arab to be able to memorize the more than 6,000 verses in Arabic! This can easily be verified on non-Arabs who have memorized the Glorious Qur'aan. We Muslims can truly claim that *Jeremiah 31:33* applies to the Glorious Qur'aan and it is a living miracle that it is inscribed in people's hearts!

Challenge: Can Christians of any denomination of any church claim that just five Christians in the whole world have memorized the Bible in any of the languages⁴⁸ that the Bible has been translated into to prove that Jeremiah 31-33 applies to the Bible and Christians? Can the Pope, or any Cardinal, Doctor of Divinity or Priest of whatever age group claim that they have memorized it fully in their own mother tongue? Or for that matter can any person of any religion make this claim of having their Holy Book inscribed into the hearts of their followers as stated in Jeremiah 31:33?

It is only the Glorious Qur'aan and no other Scripture!

The Glorious Qur'aan is the Most Read Book in the World since its Revelation 1,400 years ago, and will continue to be so till the end of time. One never tires of reading and re-reading the Glorious Qur'aan no matter how many times one reads it in one's lifetime. No other book can ever make this claim.

46 The Qur'aan has more than 6,000 verses

47 "The more important factor for the spread of Islam is the religious law, (Sharia, which is all inclusive, all embracing) which was designed to cover all manifestations of life" (Rosenthal, *Political Thought in Medieval Islam*; p.21)

48 The Bible has been translated into more than 2,000 languages

Misinformed Christians' claim that the Bible is the most read Book, which is totally erroneous. The Qur'aan is read every minute of every day⁴⁹ in every part of the world daily during Salaah (and out of Salaah) in the original revealed language of Arabic! On the other hand the majority of Christians have never read the whole Bible in their own language even once in their whole lives let alone the so-called 'original Greek'⁵⁰ manuscripts'!

2. Question: IS THE QUR'AAN NOT THE WORD OF SATAN⁵¹?

Answer: In reply to a similar allegation put forward by the pagans of Makkah, the following verses were revealed:

"No evil ones have brought down this (Revelation): It would neither suit them nor would they be able (to produce it). Indeed they have been removed far from even (a chance of) hearing it."

(Chap 26 vs. 210-212)

If satan had written the Qur'aan, would he tell you: **"When thou do read the Qur'aan, seek Allah's protection from satan the rejected one."** *Qur'aan, Chap 16 verse 98*. Does it make sense that satan will remind you to ask Allah's protection before reading the Qur'aan? There are plenty of verses in the Qur'aan, which gives enough evidence that satan is not the author of the Qur'aan. *Examples:*

"If a suggestion from satan assails your mind seek refuge with Allah; for He hears and knows (all things)". *(Surah Chap 7 v, 200)*

"O ye people! Eat of what is on earth, lawful and good; and do not follow the footsteps of the evil one (satan) for he is to you an avowed enemy." *Surah Baqarah, chap 2 v, 168:*

"O you who believe! Enter into Islam whole-heartedly; and do not follow the footsteps of the evil one (satan) for he is to you an avowed enemy." *Surah Baqarah, chap 2 v, 208*

49 Due to the different time zones around the world, the five daily prayers are performed constantly every minute of every day in the different parts of the world

50 **Question:** How many Christians have memorized the complete Bible in the 'original Greek language?' -or for that matter in any other language- so that they can claim that Jeremiah 31:33 applies to them? And how many Christians are aware that the Church claims that the 'original manuscripts' are in Greek, a language Jesus never spoke?

51 The proper name of satan is 'Iblis'. He is from the jinn, and he became satan through disobedience to Allah.

"Did I not enjoin on you, O ye children of Adam, that ye should not worship satan; for that he was to you an enemy avowed?" *Surah Yasin, chap 36 v, 60:*

" ..And satan is ever ungrateful to his Lord". *Qur'aan ch 17 v. 27*

"..And satan promises them only to deceive". *Qur'aan ch 17 v.64*

"..And as for him whose companion is satan, an evil companion is he! *Qur'aan ch 4 v.38*

"And say to My servants that they speak what is best. Surely satan sows dissensions among them. The satan is surely an open enemy to man". *Chap 17 verse 53*

"O Mankind! Certainly the promise of Allah is true. Let not then this present life deceive you, nor let the chief deceiver (satan) deceive you about Allah". *Surah Sabah Chap 34 v. 5.*

"And if a false imputation from satan afflict thee, seek refuge in Allah. Surely He is the Hearing, the Knowing. *Qur'aan. Ch 41 v. 36*

"So when she (*Mary's mother*) brought her forth, she said: My Lord, I have brought forth a female – and Allah knew best what she brought forth – and the male is not like the female, and I have named her Mary, and I commend her and her offspring into Thy protection from the accursed devil". *Qur'aan. Chap 3. v. 36*

This verse relates to when Mary (pbuh) was born, and her mother makes a prayer to Allah, beseeching Allah's protection for Mary from satan the accursed. Does it make sense that satan will remind the mother of Mary to beg Allah's protection for Mary from him?

"And satan will say when the matter is decided: 'It was Allah Who gave you a promise of truth: I too promised, but I failed in my promise to you. I had no authority over you except to call you, but ye listened to me: then do not reproach me, but reproach your own souls. I cannot listen to your cries, nor can you listen to mine. I reject your former act in associating me with Allah. For wrong doers there must be a grievous chastisement". *Chap 14 verse 22*

Allah informs mankind **currently in this world** what the outcome of satan will be on the Day of Judgement, and how satan⁵² will distance

52 Christians believe that satan has a few powers less than God so he can challenge God. That is foolish nonsense. Satan's very existence depends of God and satan is nothing but a creation just like other creation of God. In Islam, we believe that satan, named in the Qur'aan as Iblees, is a jinn, (*Q.chap. 18 v. 51*). Human beings and the jinn

himself from those that followed him. Does it make sense that satan will write about his own destruction in his own book? Any intelligent person will reject such dim-witted ideas after reading the above verses of the Qur'aan with an impartial mind. **Satan depends on Allah for his very existence!** Allah knows satan's evil intentions and hence it is no surprise that Allah has given the humankind many proofs to confirm that the Qur'aan is His word, and not satan's word.

The reason for satan's downfall is mentioned in the following verses of the Glorious Qur'aan:

Qur'aan Chap 15:29/35: "So when I have made him (Adam) complete and breathed into him of My spirit, fall down making obeisance to him. So the angels made obeisance, all of them together – but iblis (did it not); he refused to be with those who made obeisance. Allah said: O iblis, what is the reason that thou art not with those who make obeisance? iblis said: I am not going to make obeisance to a mortal, whom Thou hast created of sounding clay, of black mud fashioned into shape. Allah said: Then go forth, for surely thou art driven away, and surely on thee is a curse till the Day of Judgment".

If you still insist on the contrary then the Qur'aan challenges: (*Glorious Qur'aan: 3:61*)

"If anyone disputes in this matter with thee, now after (full) knowledge has come to thee, say: "Come! Let us gather our sons and your sons, our women and your women, ourselves and yourselves: then let us pray, and invoke the curse of GOD on those who lie".

Other titles of the Glorious Qur'aan that are mentioned in the Glorious Qur'aan itself:- (1) Al-Kitaab⁵³ (2:2), a writing which is complete in itself; (2) Al-Furqaan (25:1), that which distinguishes between truth and falsehood, between right and wrong; (3) Al-Dhikr (15:9), the Reminder or a source of eminence and glory to mankind; (4) Al- Mau'izah (10:57), the Admonition; (5) Al-Hukm (13:37), the Judgment; (6) Al Hikmat (17:39) the Wisdom; (7) Al-Shifa' (10:57), that which heals; (8) Al-Huda (72:13), that which guides or makes one attain the goal; (9) Al- Tanzil (26:192), the

have been given a free will to choose, and we will all be called to account for our beliefs and actions in the hereafter. Satan chose the path of disobedience and will be punished!

53 *Kitab* means a *book* or an *ordinance*. Whichever significance may be adopted, the meaning is that all those right directions necessary for the guidance of man, previously revealed are to be met with in the Holy Qur'aan.

Revelation; (10) Al-Rah' mat (2:105), the Mercy; (11) Al-Ruh (42:52), the Spirit or that which gives life; (12) Al-Khair (3:104), the Goodness; (13) Al-Bayaan (3:138), that which explains all things or clear statement; (14) Al-Ni'mat (93:11), the Favour; (15) Al-Burhaan (4:174), the clear Argument or manifest proof; (16) Al-Qayyim (18:2), the Maintainer or Rightly-directing; (17) Al-Muhaimin (5:48), the Guardian (of previous revelation); (18) Al-Nur (7:157), the Light; (19) Al-Haqq (17:81), the Truth; (20) Habl-Allah (3:103) - the Covenant of Allah.

In addition to the above, there are many qualifying epithets are applied to the Glorious Qur'aan: (i) Al-Mubeen (12:1), one that makes manifest; (ii) Al-Kareem (56:77), the Bounteous; (iii) Al-Majeed (50:1), the Glorious; (iv) Al-Hakeem (36:2), full of Wisdom; (v) Al-Aziz (41:41), the Mighty or Invincible; (vi) Al-Mukarramah (80:13), the Honoured; (vii) Al-Marfu'ah (80:14), the Exalted; (viii) Al-Mutahharah (80:14), the Purified; (ix) Al-'Ajab (72:1), the Wonderful; (x) Mubarak (6:92), Blessed; (xi) and Musaddiq (6:92), confirming the truth of previous revelation.

The Qur'aan also has its own Law of Interpreting its verses. No other Scripture has such a Law written in it to understand the verses!

Glorious Qur'aan-Chap 3: v.7: "He it is Who has revealed the Book to thee; some of its verses are decisive – they are the basis of the Book – and others are allegorical. Then those in whose hearts is perversity follow the part of it, which is allegorical, seeking to mislead, and seeking to give it (their own) interpretation. And none knows its interpretation save Allah, and those firmly rooted in knowledge. They say: We believe in it, it is all from our Lord..."

WHAT THE CRITICS SAY ABOUT THE GLORIOUS QUR'AAN

"That the best of Arab witnesses have never succeeded in producing anything equal to the merits in the Qur'aan... to compose such revelations at will, was beyond the power of the most expert literary artist." (Encyclopedia Britannica)

"The Qur'aan could not be the work of an uneducated man unless he had the help of the Almighty". (Dr. Laura Vaglieri)

"There is probably in the world no other book which has remained twelve (now fourteen) centuries with so pure a text".

(Sir William Muir - One of the staunchest critics of Islam)

“Over the centuries, many theories have been offered as to the origin of the Qur’aan...Today, no sensible man accepts any of these theories”. (*New Catholic Encyclopedia*)

“It is an immense merit in the Qur’aan that there is no doubt as to its genuineness...that every word we can now read with full confidence that it has remained unchanged through nearly thirteen centuries”. (*Lane Pool: “Selections from the Qur’aan”-100 years ago*)

“The text of the Qur’aan is the purest of all the works of a like antiquity”. (*Wherry in “Commentary of the Qur’aan”, vol.1 pg.349*)

3. Question: NON-MUSLIM CRITICS ALLEGE THAT THE QUR’AAN WAS NOT IN WRITTEN FORM DURING THE LIFE TIME OF THE PROPHET. IS THAT TRUE?

Answer: The kuffar will always try to cast doubt on the authenticity of the Glorious Qur’aan, but alhumdulillah, their arguments are devoid of truth. The following narration of the conversion to Islam of Omar, (*who later became the 2nd Caliph of Islam*) in Makkah proves conclusively that there were portions of the Qur’aan⁵⁴ in written form during the lifetime of the Prophet. The Qur’aan was revealed **bit-by-bit** and continued for a period of 23 years. (**13 years in Makkah, and 10 years in Madinah**) *Chap 20, ‘Ta Haa’* - being a revelation of the early Makkan period shows that written copies of the chapters of the Holy Qur’aan were in common use among the early Muslim converts at Makkah. *The narration goes thus:* Umar, with a drawn sword in his hand, one day left his house with the intention of murdering the Holy Prophet. On the way he learnt that his own sister & brother-in-law were secret converts to Islam. So he turned his steps to his sister’s house. At that time there was in the house a third man, Khab’bab, who had with him a book containing ‘**Ta Haa’** which he was teaching to Umar’s sister and her husband. When they perceived Umar coming, Khab’bab hid himself in a corner of the house, and Fatima,

54: **Alhumdulillah**, there are many **ORIGINALLY WRITTEN** verses and chapters of the Qur’aan on leather pieces perfectly preserved in the Topkapi Museum in Turkey dating back to the Prophet’s time! They have been photographed and put into a huge volume titled: **THE SACRED TRUSTS- PAVILION OF THE SACRED RELICS**. Some of the complete chapters are: Surat Abu Lahab, Surat Takathur, Surat al Humaza, and others. **The ORIGINAL QUR’AAN OF CALIPH OSMAN, WITH HIS BLOOD STAINS IS ALSO PRESERVED IN THE TOPKAPI MUSEUM, & the photograph of this Qur’aan is also in the abovementioned book.** This momentous compilation was carried out by Mr. **Hilmi Aydin, who was commissioned by the Turkish Govt. (The compiler has one of the volumes. The registered number of the volume is: 010939).**

Umar's sister, took the book and hid it. But Umar had already heard the voice of Khab'bab reciting the Holy Qur'aan. The first question he asked, on entering the house was what they were reciting. They replied, 'Nothing'. He said, 'Yes, I have heard you reciting, and I have been informed that you have followed Muhammed in his religion'. Then he caught hold of his brother-in-law, Saeed, son of Zaid. His sister advanced towards him to protect her husband and was severely hurt in the struggle. Umar's sister and her husband told him that they had converted to Islam and that he could do what he liked. When Umar saw his sister bleeding, he was sorry for what he had done, and asked her to let him have the book which they had been reading, so that he might see what it was that Muhammed had brought to them. On hearing his demand, his sister expressed the fear that he might destroy the pages. Umar gave her his word, and swore by his idols that he would return the volume to her after perusing it. Then she told him that being a mushrik (*one who set up false gods with God*) he was impure. Umar then washed himself, and his sister handed over to him the book which had "Ta Haa" written in it. Umar read a portion of it, and began to admire it and showed reverence for the book. Thereupon Khab'bab, seeing that he was well disposed towards Islam, asked him to accept Islam. Umar shortly thereafter accepted Islam at the hands of the Prophet. (*Omar was a handful of people in Makkah during that time that was literate. He was also was a fearless warrior who was respected in the community*)

4. Question: HAS ANY VERSES OF THE QUR'AAN BEEN ABROGATED?

Answer: The following verse of the Qur'aan is misunderstood by many to mean that some verses of the Qur'aan were abrogated.

Chap 16: v.101: "And when We change a message for a message – and Allah knows best what He reveals..."

It is not the abrogation of the Qur'aanic verses that is referred to here; *but of the previous messages (scriptures) sent to former prophets*. For a better understanding of the doctrine of abrogation, let us refer to *Chap 2: v. 106 of the Glorious Qur'aan:*

“Whatever message We abrogate⁵⁵ or cause to be forgotten, We bring one better than it or one like it. Knowest thou not that Allah is possessor of power over all things”?

“And (Jesus) a verifier of that which is before me of the Torah, and I allow you part of that which was forbidden to you”; Glorious Qur’aan. Chapter 3 verse 50

One can clearly distinguish that in Chapter 3, verse 50, Jesus (pbuh) speaks of abrogation of verses / messages of the previously Revealed Scripture i.e. Torah *and not of the Qur’aan*.

In the same manner the Glorious Qur’aan states that some ordinances in the previous scriptures i.e. the Torah and the Injeel were abrogated. *Examples: (1) The Qur’aan places an upper limit of four wives that a man can marry with strict conditions. Previously there was no upper limit in the Bible - O.T. & N.T. (2) The eye for an eye Old Testament Law was now changed to the Qur’aanic Law that states that one can take retaliation for the same action, or overlook it and have patience, and this patience will be rewarded in the hereafter by Allah. (3) In the previous scriptures it was forbidden to take the booty / spoils of war. The booty was collected into a pile and was consumed by a bolt of fire from heaven. This was abrogated in the Qur’aan by allowing the booty to be divided amongst the soldiers of Islam:*

“And know that whatever you acquire in war, a fifth of it is for Allah and for the Messenger⁵⁶ and for the near of kin and the

55 The Jews refused to accept a new revelation which was not granted to an Israelite. *This is stated in chap 2 vs. 90& 91. Their objection was: Why was another revelation containing new Commandments and Laws sent down to Muhammed? They are told that Allah chooses whom He pleases for His revelation and that if one law (Law that was given to Moses) was abrogated, one better than it was given through the Holy Prophet. It should be noted that the new law is here stated to be better than the one abrogated or like it. It is a fact that the law of the Qur’aan is decidedly superior to and more comprehensive than the previous laws in most respects, yet there are many points of likeness in the two.*

56 The Prophet’s portion was also used for the benefit of the poor Muslims. The words of one of his sayings are: *this fifth is given back to you*. Friend and foe admit that the Prophet led a life of the utmost simplicity alike. There is another significant fact stated in this verse: (a) **Allah uses the terms Messenger and servant**. There is no doubt that the verse corresponds to *Isaiah 42:1- Behold my servant, whom I uphold; mine elect, (chosen as a messenger) in whom my soul delighteth; I have put my spirit upon him: he shall bring forth judgment to the Gentiles, (Jesus (pbuh) did not come for the Gentiles, but Prophet Muhammed came for gentiles and non-gentiles). This is another prophecy of prophet Muhammed!(pbuh)*

orphans and the needy and the wayfarer, if you believe in Allah and in that which We revealed to Our servant, on the day of Discrimination, the day on which the two parties met. And Allah is Possessor of power over all things". *Glorious Qur'aan Chap 9 v. 41:*

"Those who follow the Messenger-Prophet, the *Ummi*, whom they find mentioned in the Torah and the Gospel. He enjoins them good and forbids them evil, and makes lawful to them the good things and prohibits for them impure things, and removes from them their burden and the shackles, which were on them. So those who believe in him and honour him and help him, and follow the light which has been sent down with him – these are the successful". Q: 7:157

(4) Another example is that in the previous scriptures the prophets were not permitted to take prisoners of war but to kill them. This order was also abrogated in the Qur'aan and the Prophet of Islam was allowed to take prisoners and to: (a) ransom them for money, (b) or the second type of ransom was that those prisoners who could read and write bought their freedom by teaching the Muslims who could not read and write, (c) or to release them as the Prophet saw fit without any conditions.

"O Prophet, say to those of the captives who are in your hands: If Allah knows anything good in your hearts, He will give you better than that which has been taken from you, and will forgive you. And Allah is Forgiving, Merciful". *Glorious Qur'aan. Chap 8 v.67*

"It is not fit for a prophet to take captives unless he has fought and triumphed in the land. You desire the frail goods of this world, while Allah desires (for you) the Hereafter. And Allah is Mighty, Wise. *Glorious Qur'aan Chapter 8 v. 70 -*

(5) In Exodus chapter 31 v. 14-16 it states the holiness of the Sabbath Day and that no work should be done. However, in the Glorious Qur'aan, **Chapter 62 vs. 9-11**, the Sabbath Day has been changed to Friday. Unlike the Jewish and the Christian Sabbaths, it is not necessarily a day of rest, **but attendance at the Jum'ah prayers is obligatory**, and as soon as the call to prayer is sounded, every Muslim is bound to leave business of every kind and immediately hasten to the mosque to join the congregational prayer. In fact, a Muslim, who is allowed to do his ordinary work on Friday, gives more time to his prayers than the majority of those who recognize a seventh day as their Sabbath. The new orders of Allah in the Glorious Qur'aan supersede the old orders of the previous Scriptures.

“Your Lord is only Allah; there is no God but He. He comprehends all things in (His) knowledge. Thus relate We to thee of the news of what has gone before. And indeed We have given thee a Reminder from Ourselves. Whoever turns away from it, he will surely bear a burden on the day of Resurrection,” Qur’aan Chap 20 vs. 98-100.

All the above verses also substantiates the fact that the scripture (Al-Qur’aan) given to Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) is from the same source as Moses & Jesus (pbut), but the difference is that what was given to him is enhanced and superior!

5. Question: WHY DO MUSLIMS CALL NON-MUSLIMS ‘KAA’FIRS’?

Answer: “Kaa’fir” is derived from the Arabic word ‘kufr’ which means ‘to conceal or to reject’. In Islamic terminology “kaffir” means: ‘one who conceals or rejects the truth of Islam’. In English any person who rejects Islam is called a ‘non-Muslim’.

If a ‘non-Muslim’ considers being called a ‘non-Muslim’ or ‘Kaa’fir’, as an abuse (*which means the same*) it is due to his misunderstanding about Islam. One needs to reach out to proper sources of understanding Islam and Islamic terminology, and then one will not feel abused, but appreciate Islam in its proper perspective.

The opposite of ‘kaa’fir in Islamic terminology is “Mu’min” which means a believer in the Glorious Qur’aan and the true teachings of the Prophet Muhammed (pbuh). **Remember!** An intelligent inquiring mind is a liberated mind that cannot be enslaved to unreasonable, illogical and blind belief!

Islam is the only religion that encourages every human being to analyse with logic and reason what one believes in! It awakens the faculty of reasoning and understanding. Blind belief is unacceptable in Islam. Can any other faith claim this in their Holy Books?

6. Question: IF A MUSLIM IS ALLOWED TO MARRY A MAXIMUM OF FOUR WIVES, WHY DID PROPHET MUHAMMED (PBUH) MARRY ELEVEN WIVES?

Answer: In Surah Nisa, chap 4, the Qur’aan⁵⁷ states that a Muslim male is allowed to marry a maximum of upto four wives. However, at

57 The Glorious Qur’aan is the only Scripture on the face of this earth that places an upper limit of the number of wives that a Muslim man is allowed to marry. No other scripture, of whatever religion -be it the Bible (O.T & N.T), Hindu scriptures- has this divine injunction limiting the number of wives a man can marry.

the same time there are certain stringent criteria that have to be followed if he wishes to do so. The following verse in the Qur'aan makes Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) an exception to this rule.

“It is not lawful for thee (Muhammed to marry more) women after this, nor to change them for (other) wives, even though their beauty attract thee, except any thy right hand should possess (as hand maidens) and Allah doth watch over all things. ” (Chap 33.v. 52)

This verse certainly grants Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) permission to keep all his wives who are **“Ummul-Mumineen⁵⁸”** but prohibits him to marry any more except those that his right hand possessed. People falsely accuse the Prophet of being hypersexual because he had eleven wives. If one studies the life history of the Prophet, only two of his marriages, one with **Khadija (r.a)**, and the other, with **Ayesha (r.a)** were marriages in the normal course. *All his other marriages were contracted as a necessity and were based on various considerations.*

The 1st marriage of the Prophet took place when he was 25 years of age to Lady Khadija (r.a) who was twice widowed and was 40 years old. If the Prophet were hypersexual, why would he marry (*his first marriage*) a woman who was 15 years older than him and already twice widowed? It was the custom for the Arabs to marry virgins. Widows were not suitable spouses in their culture, yet he married her. *As long as his first wife, Lady Khadija (r.a) was alive; he never took a second wife.* Lady Khadija (r.a) passed away when the Prophet was approximately 50/51 years of age, and only after her demise did he remarry. If he married eleven wives for sexual reasons, he should have had multiple wives during his youth.

Contrary to this, history records that all his remaining ten marriages took place when he was between the age of 51/52 and 59 years. Nine of his wives were between the ages of 36 to 82 years. Would a man, aged 52 years marry a woman of 82 years if he was hypersexual? The Prophet passed away at the age of 63 years. May Allah bless him and rest his soul.

Reasons for the 11 marriages: His importance in becoming known as a Messenger of Allah had spread in the whole of Arabia and also into the neighboring countries. *The rulers of those countries and the chieftains of the different tribes asked the Prophet's hand in*

58 The Prophet's wives are the mothers' of the believers: Q: ch.33. v. 6

*marriage*⁵⁹ for their daughters or sisters. So out of necessity to foster closer ties with the other countries and tribes the Prophet accepted the proposals. If these malicious charges were true, then he would have easily got younger and lovelier girls to marry. He was the ruler of the whole of the Arabian Peninsula yet his life was so plain and simple that when the emissaries of the foreign kings and emperors came to pay him reverence and loyalty they were **astonished at the austere** living conditions and that of all of his wives (pbut). For weeks on end there was no fire lit to cook food, and many times the Prophet tied stones onto his belly to ease the suffering of hunger pangs.

During that period of time in Arabia, nobody could carry out the work of reform and upliftment unless he belonged to, or was related to some specific tribe. Thus in the interest of his mission, the Prophet needed good inter-tribal relationships, and he had to weld the quarreling tribal and clannish factions into one Muslim ummah, as brethren in faith by accepting the proposals from those quarters.

For instance, his wife **Juwayriyya (r.a)**⁶⁰ belonged to the Banu Mustaliq clan that was very powerful. The entire clan was a bitter enemy of Islam from the beginning until they were defeated in a military campaign. But when the Prophet married Juwayriyya (r.a), the Muslims released all their prisoners, as they could not keep the Prophet's relatives in bondage. It was due to this marriage that the whole clan of Banu Mustaliq accepted Islam and obedient to the laws of the new Islamic state.

Maymunah (r.a) also came from a very powerful and recalcitrant clan from Najd and was the sister of the wife of the chief of the clan. It was this clan that had brutally murdered seventy members of an Islamic missionary deputation. The Prophet's marriage with Maymunah (r.a) changed the whole atmosphere and Najd accepted Madinah Munawwarah's authority under the leadership of the Prophet.

Umm Habibah (r.a) was the daughter of the Quraysh chief, Abu Sufyan⁶¹. It was after the Prophet's marriage to Umm Habibah that Abu Sufyan never fought against the Prophet. This marriage was largely responsible for the conquest of Makkah. Furthermore, Umm

59 The prophet's hand was sort in marriage, not the other way around

60 R.A.- 'Radi' Allah **anha**-means: Allah be pleased with her (...**anhu** means:- him)

61 Abu Sufyan & his wife, Hind were bitter enemies of the prophet in Makkah, but later embraced Islam

Habibah was first married to a certain Ubaydullah and immigrated with him to Abyssinia, where Ubaydullah became a Christian and a drunkard, and excessive consumption of wine killed him. It was a double shock to her that her husband had become a Christian and a drunkard and later died. Yet the Prophet married her for the sake of bringing peace between the clans.

Safiyyah (r.a) was the daughter of a very prominent **Jewish chief**, Huyyah ibn Aktab. In consideration of her family status, she could not be merged into an ordinary household. So the Prophet himself married her. After this marriage, the Jews did not revive their opposition to the Prophet and his mission.

The Christian missionaries of today accuse the Prophet of marrying Ayesha (ra) when she was 9 years old. Let us investigate if their accusations are correct or intended to make mischief:

The pagans of Makkah and Jews Madinah accused the Prophet of being a poet, a trickster, a forger, and every other false charge, (*astagfirullah*), during his lifetime, **but never of being untruthful or marrying a girl who was too young**. *Let us analyse this charge:*

It is generally believed that Aisha (r.a) was nine years old at the time of her marriage with Prophet Muhammed (pbuh). One must recall that the peoples of past ages were much larger than we are today, and even these days we notice that people of some geographical areas are much bigger than other peoples. One of Prophet Adam's sons was about 9mts in height, and he is buried in the outskirts of Damascus. His grave is approximately 12mts in length⁶². Over the centuries human beings have become gradually smaller than those of previous times.

Look at the size even today of the wrestlers, boxers, basketball players, rugby players and sumo wrestlers, which are massive in size. There were many companions of the Prophet that were big and tall, and it has been reported that one of them just had to put his feet on the ground while on his camel and it would pass beneath him.

Secondly, it should be noted that in countries where the climate is hot, the children mature earlier than in colder countries. Even nowadays (2007) there are reports of marriages of girls and boys of 9 and 10

62 Many groups from Cape Town have visited this grave & have taken photos of it

years old in Latin America. There are many confirmed reports in newspapers of 9-year-old girls giving birth to babies in Mexico etc!

According to the traditions of the Arab culture prevailing at that time it was customary to marry once the girls reached teenage years. If that were not the case then people would have objected to these marriages. In the case of the Prophet we find no such reports of objection mentioned by anyone, more especially from the enemies of the Prophet (pbuh). These enemies would not have hesitated to object to such a marriage, but there is no such objection recorded anywhere.

According to another narrative in Bukhârî (Kitâb al-Tafsîr) Â'ishah (ra) is reported to have said that at the time Surâh Al-Qamar, was revealed, "I was a young girl". The 54th Surâh of the Qur'aân was revealed nine years before Hijrah.

The Prophet married Aishah (r.a) about 1st / 2nd Hijrah. According to a number of narratives, Aishah (ra) accompanied the Muslims in the battle of *Badr*, which was fought two years after *hijrah*, and the battle of *Uhud*⁶³ *which was fought a year after Badr. (i.e.-3 years after Hijrah). Moreover, it is reported in books of hadiths that the Prophet did not allow any person under the age of 15 years to take part in the battle of Uhud. Everyone below 15 years of age was sent back by the Prophet!* A'ishah's (ra) participation in the battle of Badr and Uhud clearly indicates that she must have been at least fifteen years or older! This is a very significant point to remember, because if she was under the age of fifteen years, then the Prophet would not have allowed her to participate in the Battle of Uhud. Women used to accompany men to the battlefields to help them, and not to be a burden upon them.

Almost all the historians agree that Asma (ra), the elder sister of Â'ishah (ra) was ten years older than Â'ishah (ra). It is reported in *Taqreeb al- Tehzeeb* as well as *Al-Bidayah wa al-Nihayah* that *Asmâ* (ra) died in the 73rd year after *hijrah*⁶⁴ when she was 100 years old. **Now, evidently if *Asmâ* (ra) was 100 years old in the 73rd year after *hijrah*, she should have been 27 or 28 years old at the time of *hijrah*. If *Asmâ* (ra) was 27 or 28 years old at the time of *hijrah*, Â'ishah (ra) should have been 17 or 18 years old at that time.**

63 Reported by Anas (ra), hadith number 1570, page 730- Summarized Edition Sahih Bukari printed in 1994

62: Hijrah: the forced migration of the Prophet (p.b.u.h.) from Makkah to Madinah

Tabarî in his treatise on Islâmîc history, while mentioning *Abu Bakr* (ra) reports that *Abû Bakr* had four children and all four were born during the pre-Islamic period. **Obviously, if *Â'ishah* (ra) was born in that period, she could not have been less than 14 years in 1 AH - the time she most likely got married.**

On the basis of this report it seems only pragmatic to assume that *Â'ishah* (ra) had not only been born 8 years BEFORE *hijrah*, but was also a young lady, quite prepared for marriage.

According to *Ibn Hajar*, *Fatimah* (ra) was five years older than *Â'ishah* (ra). *Fatimah* (ra) is reported to have been born when the Prophet (pbuh) was 35 years old. Thus, even if this information is taken to be correct, *Â'ishah* (ra) could by no means be less than 14 years old at the time of *hijrah* and 15 or 16 years old at the time of her marriage.

*The above are some of the major points that go against accepting the commonly known narrative regarding *Â'ishah's* (ra) age of 9 years old at the time of her marriage."*

The **Arabic Glorious Qur'aan** remains the primary source from which a Muslim extracts his or her guidance. *It is universally accepted that the Holy Prophet faithfully practiced what the Qur'aan ordered.*

The verse of the **Arabic Glorious Qur'aan** which informs one as to how many wives one may take and under what conditions, uses the term *nisa'* (i.e. 'women'),⁶⁵ as there is no verse which guides one to marry child. There is no verse in the **Arabic Glorious Qur'aan** that accommodates the contrary. Therefore, once such understanding has been established, one will not accommodate the contrary.

Marriages of the Prophet's daughters and the Prophet marrying the daughter of Umar

The prophet married one of his daughters to Uthman and another daughter to Ali. Umar could not be kept outside this wide circle of relationship; so by marrying Umar's daughter, Hafsah, the Prophet forged a strong bond of relationship within the Islamic movement thus strengthening the ummah.

The Prophet had arranged a marriage between **Zaynab**, his first cousin and Zayd ibn Haritha (*his freed slave*) whom he had adopted as his son. This marriage of Zaynab with Zayd was intended to break

63: Al-Qur'aân 4:3.

the family and social barriers but the marriage did not prove to be successful and ended in divorce. When the Prophet realized that Zaynab was left alone, he felt his responsibility in the matter. He also had to break another pre-Islamic convention according to which an adopted son became a real son. This difficult problem was solved by the Prophet's marriage to Zaynab as mentioned in the Qur'aan, in Surah Ahzab, chap no: 33 verse 37. This Qur'aanic verse annulled the pre-Islamic conception and promulgated an Islamic law instead.

Another lady, also with the name **Zaynab**⁶⁶ was the daughter of Khuzayma ibn Al-Haith, who belonged to the Hawazin clan. Her husband was killed in the battle of Uhud, and to rescue her from her dismal situation, the Prophet took her as his wife.

After the revelation of the verse in Surah Ahzab, chap 33, v, 52, the Prophet married only **Mary (pbuh) the Copt**, who was sent as a handmaiden (slave) by the Emperor Muqauqas of Egypt to the Prophet Muhammed (pbuh). He could not refuse this gift, as a refusal would have disturbed the political alliance. He could not keep her as a slave girl either since he preached that slaves should be freed⁶⁷. The only option left open to him was to marry her as the Qur'aan gave him permission to do so, and to set a practical example for all time that Islam prohibits slavery.

There are hundreds of unbiased Christian scholars and historians who have written volumes in praise of the Prophet of Islam over the centuries. Today scores of priests from all denominations are accepting Islam after reading the Qur'aan and studying the life of the Prophet of Islam.

<p style="text-align: center;">THE FOLLOWING ARE JUST A FEW TRIBUTES PAID TO THE PROPHET OF ISLAM BY CHRISTIANS</p>
--

“By a fortune absolutely unique in history, Muhammed (pbuh) is a threefold founder of a nation, an empire, and of a religion. Head of the State as well as the Church, he was Caesar and Pope in one; but he

66 This Zaynab (r.a) was known as ‘Ummul Masakin’ (Mother of the poor & helpless)

67 Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) is the only person in history who had advocated the freeing of slaves 1,400 years ago, and set a practical example by doing so. He personally bought the freedom of hundreds of slaves and set them free, and called on his companions to set free their slaves as well as to purchase the freedom of others according to their financial means! *Al- Qur'aan is the only Scripture that states unequivocally to free slaves. No other Scripture has such an injunction!*

was Pope without the Pope's pretensions, and Caesar without the legions of Caesar; without a standing army, without a bodyguard, without a police force, without a fixed revenue. If ever a man had the right to say that he ruled by a right divine, it was Muhammed (pbuh) , for he had all the powers without their supports. He cared not for the dressings of power. The simplicity of his private life was in keeping with his public life.” (Reverend Bosworth Smith)

“Four years after the death of Justinian, 569 years of the Christian era, was born a man who, of all men exercised the greatest influence upon the human race... Muhammed ...” (John William Draper, M.D. L.L.D. A history of the Intellectual Development of Europe, London 1875, Vol. 1, pp 329-330)

“Philosopher, Orator, Legislator, Warrior, Conqueror of ideas, Restorer of rational beliefs, of a cult without images; the founder of twenty terrestrial empires and of ONE SPIRITUAL EMPIRE- that is Muhammed -As regards all standards by which human greatness may be measured, we may well ask, is there any man greater than he?” (Lamatine, Historie de la Turquie, Paris 1854, Vol.II pp. 276)

“It is impossible for anyone who studies the life and character of the great Prophet of Arabia, and who knows how he taught and how he lived, to feel anything but reverence for that mighty Prophet, one of the great messengers of the Supreme. And although in what I put to you I shall say many things which may be familiar to many, yet I myself feel whenever I re-read them, a new way of admiration, a new feeling of reverence for that mighty Arabian Teacher.” (Annie Besant-The Life and Teachings of Muhammed (pbuh), Madras. 1932. Page.4)

“Muhammed (pbuh) is the most successful of all Prophets and religious personalities.” (Encyclopedia Britannica)

7. Question: DOES ISLAM PERMIT WOMEN TO GIVE DIVORCE?

Answer: ‘Talaq’ is an Arabic word meaning ‘divorce’ when given by a husband to his wife. A woman can also divorce the husband in Islam, but this is called “Ismah”

According to Sunan Abu Dawood, Hadith No. 2172 and 2173, and also in Sunan Ibn-i-Majah, Hadith No. 2018, the Prophet said: **“Among the permissible things, the most disliked in the sight of Allah is divorce”.**

However the following conditions need to be fulfilled for divorce to be put into effect.

- a. The person should not be in a state of intoxication when pronouncing divorce and should be in a sound state of mind and not mentally unstable.
- b. Before deciding on giving a divorce, there should be a mutual discussion regarding the situation between the husband and the wife.
- c. According to the Glorious Qur'aan, Surah Nisa, chap 4 v. 35, if the talks fail, two arbitrators should be appointed, one from the husband's family and the other from the wife's family.
- d. Only if all these measures fail can a person give divorce.
- e. According to Surah Al-Talaq, chap 65.v.2, while pronouncing Talaq, two persons endowed with justice should be taken as witnesses.

There are five different types of divorce in Islam: -

1. With the mutual consent of both the husband and the wife. Here both must agree that there are irreconcilable differences.
2. With the unilateral will of the husband. In this case the husband has to forego the 'meher' (the dower) he had given to the wife. In case any amount of meher has remained unpaid, he should immediately make arrangements to pay it over to the wife.
3. With the unilateral will of the wife. This is only permissible if she specifies it in her marital contract that she too will have the right of unilateral divorce. This is called as Ismah or talaq-e-taufid.
4. If the husband ill-treats or neglects his wife or does not maintain her needs properly, she has a right to go to a judge who is well versed in Islamic Laws to nullify the marriage. This is called as Nikah-e-fask. In this case the judge decides whether the husband has to give the full amount of meher or a portion of it to the wife.
5. The last type is called 'Khula'. Here the husband may be very good, but due to personal reasons the wife may wish to separate. Here, with the permission of the husband she can separate but she has to forgo her marital gift (her meher).

8. Question: WHY DO MUSLIMS CALL GOD, 'ALLAH'?

Answer: Muslims prefer calling **Allah** by His name as He revealed it in the Glorious Qur'aan. **The Arabic word 'Allah' is pure and**

unique. There is not another word like it. The English word 'God' can be played around with. *Examples:*

- | | |
|------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| a. God + s = Gods: | There is no plural of Allah |
| b. God + dess = Goddess: | Allah has no gender. |
| c. God + Father = Godfather. | There is no 'godfather' in Islam. |
| d. God + Mother = Godmother: | There is no 'godmother' in Islam. |
| e. Tin + God = Tin god: | There is no 'tin god' in Islam. |

Allah is a unique word (*there is no other word comparable to it*) therefore Muslims prefer calling the Creator, '**Allah**'. But sometimes when speaking to non-Muslims we may have to use the inappropriate word 'God', for Allah for ease of conversation.

There is also a misunderstanding amongst non-Muslims that the God worshipped by Muslims differs from the God that was worshipped by Prophets Abraham, David, Moses and Jesus (pbut). Nothing could be further from the truth. It is comparable to saying that the French worship a different 'god' because they use the word 'Dieu', that the Spaniards worship a different 'god' because they say 'Dios' or that the Hebrews worshipped a different 'god' because they called Him 'Yahweh', or the Zulu 's in South Africa call Him 'Inkulunkulu', or the Afrikaners call Him 'He're".

The Glorious Qur'aan is the divine scripture of Muslims, revealed in the **Arabic language**, and God is called ALLAH in Arabic. In fact all Arab Christians⁶⁸ also name God as ALLAH!

Open the Arabic Bible to Genesis, chap 1, and the Christian will be astonished to see the word **ALLAH SIX TIMES** in the first paragraph alone. The first page has the word **ALLAH** written 17 times. In the complete Arabic Bible, the name Allah is written thousands of times! *Confirm it out for yourself by getting a copy of the Arabic Bible. (KJV)*

In the Hebrew Bible, Exodus chapter 3 vs. 13-15, the name of God is ALLAH! *Get a copy of the Hebrew Bible and confirm this also. (KJV)*

68 Most Christians are unaware that Malta is the staunchest Catholic country in the world - and they also call God 'ALLAH' in Arabic- Refer- Cape Argus (S.A.) November 13/14. 2004. Page 5, Travel Section

Reverend Scofield also used the word "ALAH" on page 3 of his Authorized English Version Bible to describe God. But when it was 'revised' by other Christian scholars, they deleted the word 'ALAH'.

The solution to the problem of the name of God for the Christians is in *Isaiah 52:6, N.I.V., p. 873* that states: **"Therefore my people will know My name; therefore in that day they will know that it is I who foretold it. Yes, it is I."**

And indisputably the people of Allah, the Muslims have been informed in the Glorious Qur'aan of the name of the Creator: ALLAH!

9. Question: CAN A MUSLIM WISH 'SALAAM' TO A NON-MUSLIM?

***Answer:* "When a courteous greeting is offered you, meet it with a greeting still more courteous, or (at least) of equal courtesy - Allah takes careful account of all things". (Glorious Qur'aan 4:86)**

a) The Qur'aan mentions in Surah Mariam chap 19 vs. 41 - 46 that Prophet Ibrahim's father was a mushrik (*polytheist*) and associated partners with God. When Prophet Ibrahim (pbuh) asked his father not to serve satan his father replied: 'I will stone you' and removed Ibrahim out of the house.

"Abraham said: 'peace be on thee' (Assalaamu Alaikum): I will pray to my Lord for thy forgiveness: for He is to me Most Gracious." (Al-Qur'aan 19:47)

b) Allah instructed Moses and Aaron that when they go to Pharaoh with the message they should say: **"And Peace (Salaam) to all who follow guidance". (Al-Qur'aan 20:47)**

This was the same greeting also used by Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) to greet Non-Muslim rulers.

c) **"And the servants of (Allah) Most Gracious are those who walk on the earth in humility, and when the ignorant address them, they say, 'Peace!' (Salaam)". (Al-Qur'aan- chap- 25 v, 63)**

d) **"And when they hear vain talk, they turn away there from and say: 'to us our deeds and to you yours; peace (Salaams) be unto you: we seek not the ignorant.'" (Al- Qur'aan chap 28 v, 55)**

10. Question: ARE WOMEN ALLOWED IN THE MOSQUE?

Answer: 1) There is not a single verse in the Qur'aan that prohibits women from entering and praying in the mosque, and there is no single authentic Hadith which states that the Prophet prevented or forbade women from going to the mosque.

There is only one Hadith, which could be *misunderstood* to mean that women should not go to the mosque. That Hadith is as follows: *'The prayer of women is better in their house than in the mosque and the prayer of women is better in their rooms than in their house.'*

The context of the Hadith is very important. The Prophet said that if a person prays in the mosque he receives 27 times more blessings. Some women argued that they had infants at home and household work and therefore could not go to the mosque. Accordingly the men had a greater advantage than women for receiving such blessings. It was then that the Prophet said the above Hadith.

2) There are several Ahadith which prove that both men and women went to the mosque during the life of the prophet:

(i) The Prophet said: 'Do not prevent the female servants of Allah from going to the mosque of Allah.'

(ii) The Prophet specifically told husbands, "When your women folk ask you for permission to attend the mosque, do not prevent them." (*Bukhari Volume 1, Book of Salaah, Chap 80, Hadith No. 832*)

(iii) From the time the Prophet came to Madinah after Hijrah till his demise, he never prevented women from entering the mosque. Women went to the mosque for prayer, religious education and literary discussions, as the mosque was the hub of the community. Several hadith inform us that the Prophet addressed audiences that consisted of men and women; and that women frequently asked questions of the Prophet in the gatherings.

(v) During the time of Caliph Umar women went to the mosque.

3) Islam does not permit the intermingling of sexes, but Islam permits women to pray in mosques, but there should have separate and equal facilities.

4) They are also allowed in the Haram Shareef in Makkah and in the prophet's Mosque in Madinah. Women are allowed in many mosques in Saudi Arabia, in U.A.E, in Egypt, in U.S.A, in England, in South Africa and in many other countries. *Allahamdulillah*, the trend is now

changing in many parts of the world as we now have mosques with separate facilities specially built for women to pray.

5) Non-Muslims are also permitted to visit the mosques to see how Muslims pray. There are no statues, idols or photos of anything in the Mosques. Muslims welcome and encourage non-Muslims to visit the mosques. Kindly contact the Imam of the local Mosque, or a Muslim friend and they will be delighted to arrange a visit for you and their families.

11. Question: IF GOD IS JUST, THEN WHY ARE SOME PEOPLE BORN HEALTHY AND SOME WITH DEFECTS; SOME PEOPLE ARE BORN IN RICH FAMILIES, WHILE OTHERS IN POOR FAMILIES

Answer: The Qur'aan states that this life is a test for the hereafter:

1. Glorious Qur'aan 8 v 28: "And know ye that your possessions and your progeny are but a trial and that it is Allah with Whom lies your highest reward".

2. Surah Mulk chap 67 verse 2: "He Who created Death and Life, that He may try (test) which of you is best in deed; And He is the Exalted in Might, oft-Forgiving."

3. Al-Qur'aan, 2, v 155: "Be sure We (Allah) shall test you with something of fear and hunger, some loss of goods or lives or the fruits (of your toil-labor, work) but give glad tidings to those who patiently persevere".

4. Al- Qur'aan Chap 3 vs. 185 &186: "Every soul will taste death. And ye will be paid on the Day of Resurrection only that which ye have fairly earned. Whosoever is removed from the hellfire and is made to enter Paradise, he indeed is triumphant. The life of this world is but comfort of illusion. Assuredly ye will be tried in your property and in your persons, and you will hear much wrong from those who were given the Scripture before you, and from the idolaters. But if you persevere and ward off evil then that is of the steadfast heart of things".

Qur'aan-Chap 64:14& 15 - O you who believe, surely of your wives and your children there are enemies to you, so beware of them. And if you pardon and forbear and forgive, surely Allah is Forgiving, Merciful. Your wealth and your children are only a trial, and Allah – with Him is a great reward. And whoever is saved from the greediness of his soul, these it is that are the successful.

Qur'aan - Chap 63 verse 9- O you who believe, let not your wealth nor your children divert you from the remembrance of Allah; and whoever does that, these are the losers.

Surah Anfal Chap 8 verse 28: "And know ye, that your possession and your progeny are but a trial; and that it is with Allah with whom lays your highest reward".

(We find a similar message in the Bible: Matt chap 10. v.36: 'And a man's foes shall be they of his own household')

From the above Ayahs we can conclude that Allah will definitely test every one of us. It also demonstrates the power of Allah, that as He wills, He creates⁶⁹.

- (a) Judgement will be based upon the difficulty of the test
- (b) Human beings with congenital defects are a test for their parents.

12. Question: WHY IS ISLAM SO RIGID WITH DO'S AND DON'TS?

Answer: Overall a way of life should be flexible, but a few regulations are essential for any system to function properly. For any government to function well there should be laws formulated to govern, just as for any structure to be successful there has to be a basic set of fixed rules.

To drive a motor vehicle on the roads of any country one has to be tested for a license to drive and observe the rules of the road. In the USA you drive on the right hand side of the road. In Britain, India and South Africa you drive on the left hand side of the road. If an Indian goes to the USA and insists on driving on the left hand side of the road as he does in India, can you imagine what a danger he will be to other road users and to himself? Similarly, every discipline has rules.

Islam also has set of laws, (do's and don'ts) while every thing else is optional. *For example*, the essential and compulsory things in Islam are: one must believe only in One God; one must offer 5 times a day Salaah; one must give Zakaat if one is rich; one must fast during the month of Ramadaan, and one should go for Hajj at least once in a lifetime if one has the financial means. Whether you are a Muslim living in America, India or in Saudi Arabia - no matter the colour of

⁶⁹ Refer Qur'aan chap 3, verses 26 & 27. The act of creating through **willing** is impossible for anyone except for the Creator.

your skin- whether rich or poor, you are a Muslim first and foremost, so the obligations are the same for every Muslim, male and female.

When it comes to wearing clothes, a few basic rules exist. A man should cover himself from navel to knees; whereas a woman's complete body except the face and hands up to the wrists should be covered - clothes should not be tight or transparent, clothes should not be glamorous, and clothes should not resemble that of the opposite sex and should not resemble that of an unbeliever. You can wear cotton or terricotton or polyester. Women can wear silk but not men. You can wear different colour shirts so far as you fulfill the Islamic criteria.

Islam is not stringent, but it is the media that portrays Islam as nonflexible. For the complete life to be successful, the basic fundamentals should be permanent, along with a few options. For example, eating of food such as pork and alcohol⁷⁰ are haram (forbidden).

Therefore, for any manner of life to be successful a few of the rules should be firm and the remaining should be flexible, and Islam is the best example. Alhamdulillah, Islam shows a complete way of life that caters to the body as well as to the soul. Allah in His infinite wisdom has revealed the Glorious Qur'aan as the guidebook for the human beings existence on earth and to achieve success in the hereafter.

13. Question: DOES ISLAM ALLOW A WOMAN TO BE A HEAD OF A STATE?

Answer: There is no direct reference in the Qur'aan that prohibits a woman from being a head of state. However, since Islam considers the male to be the leader of the house, therefore the head of the state should also be a male. Let us examine the pros and cons of a woman being the head of state in the present situation:

1. The head of State at times leads congregational prayers. A woman cannot be an Imam because during Salaah there are several postures to be adopted such as standing, bowing and prostrating. If a woman leads prayers with men standing behind, it is bound to create disturbance and distraction. (*Also it is prohibited for a female to lead the congregational prayer with men following*)

⁷⁰ Pork and alcohol are the twin menace to human health. See Questions 24 &25

2. The head of state very often has to meet other heads of state that are usually male. Islam does not permit inter-mingling of sexes. Many times they have private closed-door meetings. Islam does not permit a woman to be alone in a closed room with any males (except her father, brother, husband, & son).
3. There is usually a lot of media exposure of the head of state. Photographs and Video recordings are regularly taken and there is normally some physical contact between the head of State and other dignitaries, including handshakes. Physical contact between male and female (except husband and wife) is prohibited.
4. During the menstrual cycle there are certain mental, psychological and behavioral changes that take place in women due to the release of the sex hormone, oestrogen.
5. If a woman gets pregnant she requires rest for a few months during which she will not be able to attend to the duties as a head of state.
6. If she has children, her responsibility as a mother is more important than that as a head of state.

Therefore I am more inclined to the view of those scholars who say that a woman should not be made the head of state. However this does not mean that women cannot take active part in politics. They have a right to vote as well as take part in law making.

14. Question: WHY CAN'T MUSLIMS MARRY NON-MUSLIMS?

Answer: 1. The Qur'aan prohibits Muslims to marry non-Muslims in Surah *Baqarah chap 2 verse 221*:

“Do not marry unbelieving women until they believe: a slave woman who believes is better than an unbelieving woman even though she allures you. Nor marry (your girls) to unbelievers until they believe: a slave man who believes is better than an unbeliever even though he allures you. Unbelievers do (but) beckon you to the Fire. But Allah beckons by His grace to the garden (of bliss) and forgiveness, and makes His signs clear to mankind: that they may receive admonition”.

For a believing Muslim any instruction of the Qur'aan is sufficient as it is an order from Allah.

2. Concept of Salvation cannot differ amongst Life-Partners:

The ultimate goal and salvation for every Muslim is to attain paradise in the hereafter. A true and loving husband or wife will also want

his/her spouse to attain paradise in the hereafter. How can two life-partners live together if their ultimate goal differs? Similarly if the beliefs or concepts of salvation of the spouses differ then how can they live in congruence and achieve marital harmony?

3. The children born in a marriage of this sort will be affected psychologically.

15. Question: WHY DO MUSLIMS FAST DURING THE DAYS OF THE ENTIRE MONTH OF RAMADAN?

Answer: 1. The Qur'aan states that fasting helps controls desire and inculcates taqwah (God consciousness): "O ye who believe! Fasting is prescribed for you as it was prescribed to those before you, that ye may (learn) self-restraint". (Al-Qur'aan 2:183).

Fasting is not unique to Muslims but it is unique to Islam in the manner it is done; that for a whole month Muslims fast without food and water etc. Psychologists say that if you can control your hunger, you can control almost all your desires. The Qur'aan rightly mentions that fasting helps you to learn self-restraint i.e. in controlling your desires.

2. Fasting helps to inculcate good habits:

Along with fasting during the holy month of Ramadaan many Muslims do good deeds like charity, helping the poor, etc. which later on become a part of their routine activity in their lives.

3. Fasting helps to overcome many evils:

In the holy month of Ramadan, besides fasting, the person tends to be more virtuous which helps to overcome many evils. If a person can abstain from drinking alcohol and smoking cigarettes from dawn to dusk in Ramadan, he can abstain from smoking cigarettes and drinking alcohol from the cradle to the grave. All intoxicants are forbidden in Islam.

4. Every machine requires servicing:

We service our car once every 3 to 4 months. The most complicated machine on the face of the earth is the human body, so it also requires servicing. Accordingly, fasting during the month of Ramadan is the annual servicing of the human body and spirit, i.e. one month per year.

5. Fasting gives rest to Body:

During fasting Muslims abstain from food, drink, etc. from dawn to dusk. While fasting, many organs of the body get rest, which is important for good health.

6. Just two Medical Benefits of Fasting:

a. Fasting increases intestinal absorption.

b. Fasting also lowers cholesterol levels that help to prevent several Cardio-Vascular diseases.

Point to remember: Jesus (pbuh) regularly fasted: He said: *Matt 5 v. 6- 'Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness'*⁷¹.

16. Question: WHY DO MUSLIMS FOLLOW THE LUNAR CALENDAR INSTEAD OF THE SOLAR CALENDAR?

Answer: 1. Each solar year the months fall in the same respective seasons. For e.g. the months of March, April and May in India will always have summer, while July, August, September will always have monsoons i.e. rains. November, December and January will always have winter.

2. In the lunar calendar, during different years the Islamic months fall in different seasons. The lunar calendar has about 11 days less than the solar calendar, thus, every year, the month of the lunar calendar occurs 11 days prior to what it had occurred in the previous solar year. Thus, in a span of about 33 lunar years a human being will have a taste of all the different seasons for one particular month of the lunar calendar. This is important because the yearly activities of a Muslim are based on the lunar calendar and certain months like Ramadaan ⁷² and Hajj are very important to the Muslims.

During the full month of Ramadaan a Muslim is obliged to fast by abstaining from food and drink from sunrise to sunset. If the Islamic months were based on the solar calendar where the seasons were fixed, then people living in certain parts of the world would have Ramadaan in summer continuously while in other parts of the world it would be winter continuously. Some Muslims would have to fast

71 Muslims are the real followers of Jesus (pbuh) and are blessed. Muhammed (pbuh), and all the Prophets also fasted.

72 For Christians, December 25th is "Christmas". This month will forever remain summer for the southern hemisphere and winter in the northern hemisphere. The southerners will never experience a 'white Christmas' just as the northerners will never experience a 'summer Christmas'!

for a longer period of time where the days are longer while other Muslims would have to fast for a shorter period of time where the days are shorter throughout their lives, which would be unfair.

By utilizing the lunar calendar there is more fairness as every Muslim has a taste of fasting in different seasons and for a different number of hours per day in a span of about 33 years of his life. So the wisdom of using the lunar calendar is proved as superior.

17. Question: DOES 'JIHAD' MEAN HOLY WAR IN ISLAM?

Answer: Jihad has a wide meaning in Islam. The western media loves to portray this word as 'a war on the west', which terrifies non-Muslims the world over. **The essential meaning of JIHAD is to "struggle and strive against one's own passion".**

Dr. Ibrahim Abu Rabi calls Jihad "*the execution of effort against evil in the self and every manifestation of evil in society*".

In this manner Jihad is the Muslims' purest sacrifice; to struggle to live a perfect life and completely submit ones-self to Allah as is stated in the Glorious Qur'aan, and practically demonstrated by the Prophet of Islam. Another level of Jihad is to propagate the truth of Islam to the non-Muslims and call them with wisdom and good preaching to study the Qur'aan for themselves. There is no compulsion in Religion as is stated many times in the Qur'aan; **but it the duty and obligation on each and every Muslim to invite towards Islam.** Refer to Chap 9 verse 24 of the Glorious Qur'aan.

The aspect of Jihad that is commonly known to non-Muslims is that of fighting - or holy war -through the propaganda machines of the western media. It is essential to understand what is condoned and condemned in warfare according to the Qur'aan, and as practiced by the Prophet of Islam. **Islam does not justify aggressive warfare;** but stresses the need to defend oneself against aggression. **Islam allows defensive warfare.** Islam prohibits the killings of non-combatants, the old and infirm, women and children, destroying of crops and homes and the like⁷³. History records that the Muslim armies practiced all of

73 America that claims to be the champion of Christianity has since 1945 till 2007 and counting: Bombed and killed the weak, infirm, non-combatants, destroyed crops and animals etc in Hiroshima, Vietnam, Afghanistan, Libya, Sudan and Iraq. Between 1898 and 1934, the Marines invaded Cuba 4 times, Nicaragua 5 times, Honduras 7 times, the Dominican Republic 4 times, Haiti twice, Guatemala once, Panama twice, Mexico 3 times and Columbia 4 times," Washington has intervened militarily in foreign countries more than 200 times. Christians Serbs murdered more than 8,000 unarmed Bosnian

the above. The Glorious Qur'aan states very clearly this in just one verse (there are many verses but this one should suffice to prove the above statements)

Chap 2: 190- "Fight in the way of Allah those who fight against you, but transgress not the limits. Truly Allah likes not the transgressors".

The Christians seem to overlook the fact that Jesus (pbuh) also taught "Jihad' when there was injustice as is mentioned in **Luke chap 22 verse 36: Then said he unto them, But now, he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise his scrip: and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one. (Also stated in Mark 14:47)**

Numbers 18:10: Then Simon Peter having a sword drew it, and smote the high priest's servant, and cut off his right ear. (The servant's name was Malchus).

18. Question: WHY DOES ISLAM DEGRADE WOMEN BY KEEPING THEM BEHIND THE VEIL?

Answer: Let us begin with a quote from the Glorious Qur'aan from chap 2 v 228 about the status of women in Islam..."**And women have rights similar to those against them in a just manner, and men are a degree above them. And Allah is Mighty, Wise**".

The statement that "men are a degree above them" does not nullify the rights of the women, but the words simply show that superior authority to run the house must be given to either the husband or the

Muslims in one camp alone, and killed & raped so many other Muslims in other parts of Bosnia. . In October,14, 2006 the B.B.C. reported that LANCET, the respected British Medical Journal has recorded an official tally of 650,000 civilians killed in Iraq by the American army. The unofficial tally is more than 1,500,000 civilians dead and millions more injured. The Germans, who also claim to be Christians, started two World Wars that claimed more than 30,000,000 lives. - *Mr. Bayle, a Christian writes in his book; 'Dictionary, the article Mahomed': "Christians enjoy the fine advantage of being far better versed than others in the art of killing, bombarding and exterminating the Human Race". How very, very true of George Bush and Tony Blair who both claim to be Christians. Bush & Blair have the blood of millions of Iraqis, Afghanis, Kashmiris and Palestinians on their hands. But lest they forget, they are definitely going to be punished for their crimes. Thomas Caryle so aptly said: "Foolish men imagine that because judgment for an evil thing is delayed, there is no justice...Judgment for an evil thing is many times delayed...but it is sure as life, it is sure as death."* *Qur'aan Chapter 42 verse 21: ... "And surely for the wrongdoers is a painful chastisement".* *Bush & Blair lied to the world about 'weapons of mass destruction' in Iraq. Socrates said: "False words are not only evil in themselves, but they infect the soul with evil".* *"The USA is being destroyed by Bush & the neo cons". Paul Craig Roberts. June 2007*

wife, and it is given to the husband for reasons stated in Q-4:34. The rights of women against their husbands are here stated to be similar to those, which the husbands have against their wives. The statement must no doubt, have caused a stir in a society, which never recognized any rights for the woman. The change in this respect was really a revolutionizing one, for the Arabs hitherto regarded women as mere chattels. Women were now given a position equal in all respects to that of men, for they were declared to have rights similar to those which were exercised against them. This declaration brought about a revolution not only in Arabia but in the whole world, for the equality of the rights of women with those of men was never previously recognized by any nation or any reformer. The woman could no longer be discarded at the will of her "lord", but she could either claim equality as a wife or demand a divorce.

The 'hijab' or the Islamic dress is cited by many as an example of the 'subjugation' of women under Islamic law. Before we analyze the reasoning behind the religiously mandated 'hijab', let us first have a brief look at the status of women in pre-Islamic societies:

1. In the past ages women were degraded and used as objects of lust by men: The following examples from history amply illustrate the fact that the status of women in earlier civilizations was disgraceful to the extent that they were denied basic human dignity:

Babylonian Civilization:

The women were degraded and were denied all rights under the Babylonian law. If a man murdered a woman, instead of him being punished, his wife was put to death. *Absolute and total injustice!*

Greek Civilization:

Greek Civilization is considered the most glorious of all ancient civilizations. Under this very 'glorious' system, women were deprived of all rights and were looked down upon. In Greek mythology an 'imaginary woman' called 'Pandora' is the root cause of misfortune of human beings. The Greeks considered women to be subhuman and inferior to men. The Greeks were later overwhelmed by ego and sexual perversions. Prostitution became a regular practice amongst all classes of Greek society.

Roman Civilization:

A man had the right to take the life of his wife. Prostitution and nudity were common amongst the Romans.

Egyptian Civilization:

The Egyptians considered women evil and as a sign of a devil.

Women's Rights in Hinduism

According to Hindu Scriptures a woman has to obey her husband as a god, and tolerate any atrocity meted out to her, and a widow is required to mount the funeral of her dead husband and be cremated along with his corpse. This is called '*Sati*'. If she does not do so then the alternative is enforced widowhood⁷⁴. These practices are still valid today in India amongst the orthodox Hindus.

Pre-Islamic Arabia:

Before Islam in Arabia, the Arabs looked down upon women and very often when a female child was born, she was buried alive, as it was as if it was a bad omen.

SAYINGS OF CHRISTIAN SAINTS: (*Christian Civilization*)

1. Woman is the organ of the Devil. (*St. Bernard*)
2. Woman is the fountain of the Arm of the Devil; her voice is the hissing of the serpent. (*St. Anthony*)
3. Woman is the instrument that the Devil uses to possess of our souls. (*St. Cyprian*)
4. Woman is the gate of the Devil, the road of iniquity, the sting of the scorpion. (*St. Jerome*)
5. Woman is the daughter of falsehood, a sentinel of Hell, the enemy of the Peace; through her Adam lost Paradise. (*St. John Damascene*)
6. Through her the Devil triumphed, through her Paradise has been lost; of all wild beasts the most dangerous is woman. (*St. John Chrysoston*)
7. Woman has the poison of an asp, the malice of a dragon. (*St. Gregory the Great*)

Ironic isn't it? All these saints of Christendom condemn women, including their own mothers! They still remain saints in Christendom. By right they should be stripped of their sainthood!

⁷⁴ The sufferings of widows led many of them to suicide. This touching appeal made by a Hindu woman to God may be quoted here: '*O Lord! Why has Thou created us to make us suffer thus? From birth to death, sorrow is our portion. While our husbands live we are their slaves; when they die, we are still worse off*'.

The Old Testament is still the law for the Jews, as well as for the Christians states: *DEUTRONOMY 25:11* - **When men strive together one with another, and the wife of the one draweth near for to deliver her husband out of the hand of him that smiteth him, and putteth forth her hand, and taketh him by the secrets: DEUTRONOMY 25:12. Then thou shalt cut off her hand, thine eye shall not pity her.**

HYPOCRISY / DOUBLE STANDARDS OF THE WEST TOWARDS THE DRESSING OF MUSLIM WOMEN

Muslim women dress in a manner as the late Mother Teresa and Mary the mother of Jesus (pbut). Yet Muslim women are harassed and the Christian nuns are not, although the dressing is about the same.

ISLAM - SAYINGS OF PROPHET MUHAMMED ABOUT WOMEN

- 1.** Women are fragile like glasses and men should therefore treat women with delicacy and tenderness, as they would handle an article made of glass.
- 2.** Do ye not know that women deserve a greater reward than men, for verily the Almighty God exalts the position of a man in Heaven because his wife was pleased with him and prayed for him?
- 3.** The best woman is she who gladdens her husband when he looks up to her, and obeys him when he tells her anything, and who does not fail him in regard to herself or her riches so as to displease him.
- 4.** The world and all the things in it are valuable, but the most valuable thing in the world is a virtuous wife.
- 5.** A Muslim must not be harsh in treatment of his wife, if he be displeased with one bad quality in her, then let him be pleased with another which is good and admonish your wife with kindness.
- 6.** The best amongst you is the one who treats his wife the best.

Dress Etiquette in Islam - Hijab for men

People usually only discuss 'hijab' in the context of women. However, in the Glorious Qur'aan, Allah first mentions 'hijab' for men before 'hijab' for the women. **"Say to the believing men that they should lower their gaze and guard their modesty: that will make for greater purity for them: and Allah is well acquainted with all that they do."** (*Al-Qur'aan 24:30*)

Hijab for women

The next verse of says: **“And say to the believing women that they should lower their gaze and guard their modesty; that they should not display their beauty and ornaments except what (must ordinarily) appear thereof; that they should draw veils over their bosoms and not display their beauty except to their husbands...”** (Al-Qur’aan 24:31)

According to Qur’aan and Sunnah there are basically six criteria for observing hijab:

1. Extent: The first criterion is the extent of the body that should be covered which is different for men and women. The extent of covering that is obligatory on the male is: to cover the body at least from the navel to the knees. For women, the extent of obligatory covering is to cover the complete body except the face and the hands upto the wrist.

The remaining five criteria are the same for men and women.

2. The clothes worn should be loose fitting and *should not* reveal the shape of the figure.

3. The clothes worn *should not* be transparent, such that one can see through them.

4. The clothes worn *should not* be so glamorous as to attract the opposite sex.

5. The clothes worn *should not* resemble that of the opposite sex.

6. The clothes worn *should not* resemble that of the unbelievers, and they *should not* wear symbols of the non-Muslims. E.g. Cross or Aum signs

4. Hijab includes conduct and behaviour among other things

Complete ‘hijab’, besides the six criteria of clothing, also includes the moral conduct, behaviour, attitude and intention of the individual. A person only fulfilling the criteria of ‘hijab’ of the clothes is observing ‘hijab’ in a limited sense. ‘Hijab’ of the eyes, ‘hijab’ of the heart, ‘hijab’ of thought and ‘hijab’ of intention should accompany ‘hijab’ of the clothes. Hijab also includes the way a person walks, the way a person talks, the way he behaves, etc.

5. Hijab prevents molestation

The reason why Hijab is prescribed for women is mentioned in the Qur’aan in the following verses of Surah Al-Ahزاب:

“O Prophet! Tell thy wives and daughters, and the believing women that they should cast their outer garments over their persons (when

leaving home); that is most convenient, that they should be known (as such) and not molested. And Allah is Oft-Forgiving, Most Merciful." (Al-Qur'aan 33:59)

The Qur'aan states that hijab has been prescribed for the women so that they are recognized as modest women and this will also prevent them from being molested. Muslim women who wear the Hijab do so out of their own free will and feel safer in the hijab due to the respect and dignity it gives them. *Muslim women call the hijab their "Coat of Armour"*.

6. Example of twin sisters

Suppose two sisters who are twins, equally beautiful, walk down the street. One of them is attired in the Islamic hijab, and the other sister is wearing western clothes- a mini skirt or shorts. Will a man interfere with the girl wearing the Islamic Hijab or the girl wearing the skirt or the mini? Such dressing is an indirect invitation to the opposite sex for teasing and molestation. The Qur'aan accurately says that hijab prevents women from being molested.

7. Capital punishment for the rapists

Western talk of women's liberalization is nothing but a disguised form of exploitation of her body, degradation of her soul, and deprivation of her honour. Western society claims to have 'uplifted' women, but on the contrary it has actually degraded them to the status of concubines, mistresses and society butterflies, that are mere tools in the hands of pleasure seekers and sex marketers hidden behind the colourful screen of 'art' and 'culture'.

Under the Islamic Shariah, a man convicted of raping a woman is given capital punishment. Non-Muslims are astonished at this 'harsh' sentence. Some even say that Islam is a ruthless, barbaric religion! I have asked a simple question to hundreds of non-Muslim men. Suppose, someone rapes your wife, your mother or your sister and you are made the judge in the case. When the rapist is brought before you and proved guilty what punishment would you meet out to him? All of them said they would put him to death. Some went to the extent of saying they would torture him to death. *I ask*: if someone rapes *your* wife, *your* sister or *your* mother you want to put him to death and even torture the perpetrator; but if the same crime is committed on somebody else's wife, mother or daughter you say capital punishment is barbaric. **MUSLIM WOMEN'S** Is that not being a hypocrite / fraud? Why should there be double standards?

The European Union spokesperson in a B.B.C. interview (20.05.2006) admitted that the “western way of promoting prostitution is a MODERN FORM OF SLAVERY”.

The Bible says in Leviticus Chap 10:9 - For every one that curseth his father or his mother shall be surely put to death...

Lev 10:10 And the man that committeth adultery with another man's wife, even he that committeth adultery with his neighbor's wife, the adulterer and the adulteress shall surely be put to death. Lev 10:11 And the man that lieth with his father's wife hath uncovered his father's nakedness: **both of them shall surely be put to death;** Lev 10:12 And if a man lie with his daughter in law, **both of them shall surely be put to death...** Lev 10:13 If a man also lies with mankind, as he lieth with a woman, **both of them have committed an abomination: they shall surely be put to death;** their blood shall be upon them. Lev 10:14 And if a man takes a wife and her mother, it is wickedness: **they shall be burnt with fire, ...** Lev 10:15 And if a man lie with a beast, **he shall surely be put to death;** and ye shall slay the beast. Lev 10:16 And if a woman approach unto any beast, and lie down thereto, **thou shalt kill the woman,** and the beast...

Consequently if it were argued that the Islamic Shariah Law is barbaric, **then the Biblical Law⁷⁵ is twice as barbaric**, because unlike the Bible, the Glorious Qur'aan prescribes flogging and not death, for pre marital sex (Qur'aan 24:2). The Bible also prescribes death just for cursing one's father, etc as mentioned above, and the Bible Orders to kill and even to burn them to death for the other offences!

8. USA has one of the highest rates of rape

According to a FBI report, in the year 1990, an average of 2,000 cases of rape were committed daily in U.S.A alone.

Consider a scenario where the Islamic hijab is followed in America. Whenever a man looks at a woman and any brazen or unashamed thought comes to his mind, he lowers his gaze. Every woman wears the Islamic hijab that completely covers her body except the face and the hands upto the wrist. After this if any man commits rape he is given capital punishment. I ask you, in such scenario, will the rate of rape in America increase, will it remain the same, or will it decrease?

⁷⁵ This is another example of abrogation of the old laws of the Bible to that of the superior Qur'aanic Law.

9. Implementation of Islamic Shariah will reduce the rate of rapes and positive results will be inevitable.

If Islamic Shariah is implemented in any part of the world, society will breathe easier. Hijab does not degrade a woman but rather uplifts the dignity of a woman and protects her modesty and chastity. As proof that the Shariah's Law is best, compare the western countries rape and robbery statistics with Saudi Arabia's, which implements Islamic Shariah. Islam uplifted the status of women and granted them their just rights 1,400 years ago. Islam expects women to maintain their status.

10. Recent statistics of polls taken by CNN and Time (2004) have found that after the 9/11 bombings 20,000 Americans reverted to Islam, and amongst them, **two thirds (66%) have been women**. The Western Media portrays Islam, as a religion that suppresses women, then why is it that more women are accepting Islam than men? Does this not prove that the Western Media is waging a war against Islam? However, with the grace of Allah yet more and more women are becoming Muslims all over the world.

11. An English lady, Mrs. Yvonne Ridley accepted Islam in the 1990's after reading the Qur'aan⁷⁶: she says: *How I came to love the veil--"I kept my word to the Taliban after they released me about studying Islam--and was amazed by what I discovered. I had been expecting to read Qur'aanic chaps on how to beat your wife and oppress your daughters; instead, I found passages promoting the liberation of women. Two-and-a-half years after my capture, I converted to Islam, provoking a mixture of astonishment, disappointment and encouragement among friends and relatives"*.

19. Question: HOW CAN ISLAM BE THE RELIGION OF PEACE WHEN IT WAS SPREAD BY THE SWORD?

Answer: This used to be a common complaint among non-Muslims, that Islam would not have millions of adherents all over the world, if it had not been spread by the use of force. The following points will make clear, that far from being spread by the sword, it was the inherent force of truth, reason and logic of the Glorious Qur'aan that

76 When Mrs. Ridley was a Christian she got her information on Islam from 2nd & 3rd sources. Only when she read the Glorious Qur'aan for herself, (authentic source) did she understand Islam properly and thereafter accepted Islam as the true way of life. Muslims are not surprised at her conversion & of the other millions of Christians, as we know that any reasonable person will revert to Islam on reading the Glorious Qur'aan.

was responsible (*and still is*) for the rapid spread of Islam. Islam makes it an article of faith to believe in all the previous prophets that were sent for the guidance of mankind over the centuries, unlike the Jews and the Christians. The Jews reject Jesus (pbuh) and Muhammed (pbuh) and the Christians reject Muhammed (pbuh).

Remarkable fact: In Arabic the word 'sword' has twelve different words to describe it, but it is not mentioned even once in the Glorious Qur'aan. **Lo! Behold! Amazingly, the word 'sword' is written 448 times in 404 verses in the Bible, and yet Christianity claims to be the religion of peace!**

Christian religious scholars and historians have now admitted the deception of accusing Muslims of spreading Islam by the sword. Even the Roman Catholic Church in the Vatican has had to admit that this was an absurd accusation that through repetition was given a semblance of credence.

The fact is that the reverse is true. *The Church after the Nicene Council of 325 massacred by the sword 12,000,000 (twelve million) Unitarian followers of Jesus (pbuh) during the Inquisition period as recorded in the book titled 'Apology to Muhammed and the Qur'aan', written by a Christian historian, Mr. John Davenport.* How conveniently the Christians missionaries forget that according to their own concocted Bible they attribute the following sayings to Jesus which prove the exact opposite of their claims that Jesus (pbuh) was a prince of peace:

Matt.10-34: Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword. *Matt.10-35:* For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

Luke 12:53: The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father; the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the mother; the mother in law against her daughter in law, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.

On the other hand the Glorious Qur'aan states unequivocally:

***Qur'aan Chap 64.v.12-* And obey Allah and obey the Messenger; but if you turn away, the duty of Our Messenger is only to deliver (the message) clearly.**

Qur'aan Chap 2:256- "There is no compulsion in religion. The right direction is henceforth distinct from error"⁷⁷

Qur'aan Chap 10: 99 -"And if your Lord willed, all those who are in the earth would have believed (all) together. Will you then compel people until they become believers?"

Qur'aan Chap 16:125 - "Call unto the way of your Lord with wisdom and fair exhortation, and reason with them in the better way".

Qur'aan Chap 12:108 - This is my (prophet's) way: I invite unto Allah with sure knowledge: I and whosoever follows me".

Huston Smith in his book titled "The World's Religions" says on page 256: *"The Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) granted freedom of religion to the Jews and Christians and had a special document drawn up to this effect. In it was also stated- They shall be protected from all insults and vexations; shall have equal rights with the Muslims and have the assistance of the Muslims, and to practice their religions as freely as the Muslims."* *Ira Zepp Jr* in his book titled "A Muslim Primer" says: *"It is unfortunate that Islam has been stereotyped as the 'religion of the sword'. In any case, Islam cannot be forced on anyone; if profession of the shahadah (the declaration of Islamic belief) is forced on anyone, it is not true Islam".*

Does this not prove the lies and hatred of those⁷⁸ who say that Islam was spread by the sword? It also means submitting ones' will to Allah (swt). The best reply to the misconception that Islam was spread by the sword is given by the noted historian *De Lacy O'Leary* in the book *"Islam at the cross road"* (Page 8): *"History makes it clear however,*

77: Before the advent of the Prophet the Arabs buried the female babies alive. They used to take vows that if their wives gave birth to a boy, they would make him follow the Jewish religion, as they lived side by side with the Jews in Madinah. They knew that the Jews were waiting for the final messenger that was to come, and the Jews had described in detail the attributes of the Holy Prophet from their books to them. When some of them went on pilgrimage to Makkah, they recognised the Prophet from the description of the Jews. When the Prophet migrated to Madinah they welcomed him and accepted Islam. After that they began to force their sons to also accept Islam and renounce Judaism. That is when Allah revealed this verse informing them (and the whole of humanity) that there is no compulsion in religion. They must make their own choice of their belief.

78: The latest liar in a long list of liars is the new Pope Ratzinger, who repeated this lie in Germany in September 2006. Ratzinger was a close confidant of the late Pope John Paul, but betrayed his predecessor by not carrying out his promise to destroy John Paul's private papers upon his death. *Can a man who betrays his leader and close friend be trusted?*

that the legend of fanatical Muslims sweeping through the world and forcing Islam at the point of the sword upon conquered races is one of the most fantastically absurd myth that (Christian) historians have ever repeated."

Muslims ruled Spain for 800 years

The Muslims in Spain never used the sword to force the people to convert. Later the Christian Crusaders came to Spain and massacred the Muslims⁷⁹ in wholesale slaughter. There was not a single Muslim in Spain who could openly give the 'adhan', the call to prayers. **This is recorded in the history books and proves that in fact the sword spread Christianity.**

20 million Arabs are Coptic Christians

Muslims were the lords of Arabia for 1,400 years. For a few years each the British and the French ruled. Overall, the Muslims ruled Arabia for 1,400 years. Yet today, there are 20 million Arabs who are Coptic Christians i.e. Christians since generations. If the Muslims had used the sword there would not have been a single Arab who would have remained a Christian.

More than 80% non-Muslims in India

The Muslims ruled India for about 1,000 years. They had the power of converting each and every non-Muslim of India to Islam. Today more than 80% of the population of India is non-Muslims (*Hindus, who are idol worshippers*). ***All these non-Muslim Indians are witnesses today that the sword did not spread Islam when Muslims ruled India for those 1,000 years.*** During the time that Muslims ruled India the Hindus were given equal opportunities to work and were not discriminated against.

However, after India gained independence in 1947 (through the equal efforts of Muslims and Hindus); the Hindus who are in the majority marginalized the Muslims completely. They are discriminated against and are denied equal opportunities to work etc. A poll commissioned by the Indian Government in 2006, found that the Muslims are the most disadvantaged and poorest people in the whole of India, even more so than the lowest caste Harichans. It was also reported by the

⁷⁹ When the remaining Muslims fled Spain, ***the Jews also left with the Muslims as they felt safer with the Muslims than with the Christians.*** How ironic that today the children of those Jews are massacring Muslims in Palestine where they were welcomed by Muslims

B.B.C. World service on the 18th December 2006 that the Muslims of India are the most excluded group in India because of their religion. What a turnaround when others rule over Muslims!

Indonesia, Malaysia & East Coast of Africa

Indonesia is a country that has the maximum number of Muslims in the world. The majority of people in Malaysia are Muslims. No Muslim army ever went to Indonesia and Malaysia to forcibly convert the people to Islam. Similarly, Islam has spread rapidly on the East Coast of Africa. One may ask, if Islam was spread by the sword, "Which Muslim armies went to Indonesia, Malaysia and the East Coast of Africa to force them to become Muslims?"

The famous historian, **Thomas Carlyle** in his book "Heroes and Hero worship" refers to this misconception about the spread of Islam: *"The sword indeed, but where will you get your sword? Every new opinion at its starting is precisely in a minority of one⁸⁰ in one man's head alone. There it dwells as yet. One man alone of the whole world believes it, there is one man against all men. That he takes a sword and try to propagate with that will do little for him. You must get your sword! On the whole, a thing will propagate itself as it can."*

"Invite (all) to the way of thy Lord, with wisdom and beautiful preaching, and argue with them in ways that are best and most gracious." (Al-Qur'aan 16:125)

Islam is the sword of intellect that conquers the hearts and minds of people, and makes them revert to Islam willingly.

Increase in the world religions from 1934 to 1984.

The Reader's Digest⁸¹ 'Almanac', yearbook 1986, gave the statistics of the increase of percentage of the major religions of the world from 1934 to 1984. At the top was Islam, which increased by 235%, and Christianity had increased only by 47%. May one ask which Muslim

80 Is it credible to believe that one man aged 40 years of age; 1,400 years ago took the sword and forced thousands of people in his community to accept his belief? I challenge anyone to try and do that even today with the most sophisticated weaponry and see if they will succeed. The USA is supposed to be the super power in the world, but they have failed in Afghanistan and Iraq to impose their type of democracy on the people. **It can never be done! Belief is of the heart and mind. The Qur'aan is the only 'weapon' that even today is winning the hearts and minds of people after 1,400 years the world over.** Most of those concerting to Islam are Christians.

81 This article also appeared in 'The Plain Truth', a Christian magazine.

army converted millions of people in the 20th century, mainly Christians at the point of a sword to Islam?

Islam is the fastest growing religion in America and Europe.

Today the fastest growing religion in Europe, America and all over the world is Islam. Which sword is forcing people in the West to accept Islam in such large numbers?

On the 18/07/2005, on B.B.C. news report it was acknowledged that ISLAM is still the fastest growing religion in the world, not withstanding the 9th September 2001 bombings in America; 3/11/2004 Madrid train bombings, and the London bombings of 7/7/2005.

Again on the 16th December 2006, it was reported on the B.B.C. Radio that Islam is on the rise in the U.K. and Europe.

“People who worry that nuclear weaponry will one day fall in the hands of the Arabs, fail to realize that the Islamic bomb has been dropped already, it fell the day MUHAMMED (PBUH) was born”.

Dr. Joseph Adam Pearson

20. Question: WHY DO MUSLIMS SLAUGHTER ANIMALS, IN THE WAY THEY DO?

Answer: The Islamic method of slaughtering animals known as **Zabiha** has been the object of much criticism by non-Muslims. One may consider the following points, which prove that the **Zabiha** method is not only humane but also the best method scientifically:

1. Islamic method of slaughtering animal

‘Zakkaytum’ is a verb derived from the root word Zakah (to purify). Its infinitive is Tazkiyah, which means purification. The Islamic mode of slaughtering an animal requires the following conditions to be met:

- a. The animal has to be slaughtered swiftly with a sharp knife so that the pain of slaughter is minimized. Zabiha is an Arabic word, which means ‘slaughtered’. The ‘slaughtering’ is to be done by cutting the throat, windpipe and the blood vessels in the neck causing the animal’s death without cutting the spinal cord.
- b. The blood has to be drained before the head is removed. The purpose is to drain out most of the blood that would serve as a culture medium for micro-organisms that is dangerous to health. The spinal cord must not be cut as the nerve fibres to the heart could be damaged

during the process causing cardiac arrest, thus causing the blood to stagnate in the blood vessels.

2. Blood is dangerous medium to spread germs, toxins & bacteria

Therefore the Muslim way of slaughtering is more hygienic as most of the blood containing germs, bacteria, toxins, etc. that are the cause of several diseases are eliminated.

3. Meat remains fresh for a longer time

Meat slaughtered the Islamic way remains fresh for a longer period of time due to deficiency of blood in the meat as compared to other methods of slaughtering.

4. Animal does not feel pain

The swift cutting of vessels of the neck disconnects the flow of blood to the nerve of the brain responsible for pain. Thus the animal does not feel pain. While dying, the animal struggles, writhes, shakes and kicks, not due to pain, but due to the contraction and relaxation of the muscles deficient in blood and due to the flow of blood out of the body.

21. Question: IF ISLAM IS AGAINST IDOL WORSHIP, WHY DO MUSLIMS WORSHIP AND BOW DOWN IN PRAYER TO THE KAABA?

Answer: The Kaaba is the **Qibla** i.e. the **direction** Muslims face during their daily prayers. It is important to note that though Muslims face the Kaaba during prayers, they do not worship the Kaaba. Muslims worship and bow only to Allah. It is mentioned to the Prophet in Surah Baqarah the second chap of the Glorious Qur'aan:

“We see the turning of thy face (for guidance) to the heavens: now shall We turn thee to a Qiblah that shall please thee. Turn then thy face in the direction of the Sacred Mosque: wherever ye are, turn your faces in that direction.” (Al-Qur'aan 2:144)

1. Islam believes in fostering unity

For instance, if Muslims want to offer Salaah (Prayer), it is possible that some may wish to face north, while some may wish to face south. In order to unite Muslims in their worship of the One True God, Muslims, wherever they may be are told to face in only one direction only i.e. towards the Kaaba, which is in Makkah.

2. Tawaf (circumbulation) around Kaaba for indicating one God

When the Muslims go to Masjid-e-Haram in Makkah, they perform tawaf around the Kaaba. This act symbolizes the belief and worship of One God, since, just as every circle has one centre, so also there is only one Allah (swt) worthy of worship.

3. People climbed on top of Kaaba to call out the adhaan:

At the time of the Prophet, *the muezzin*⁸² *even stood on top of the Kaaba and gave the 'adhaan'*. One may pose the question to those who allege that Muslims worship the Kaaba: **Which idol worshipper will dare to stand on the idol he worships?**

22. Question: WHY DOES ISLAM STRESS SO MUCH EMPHASIS ON CLEANLINESS, ESPECIALLY WHEN VISITING THE TOILET?

Answer: A Muslim has to be in a state of constant purity, as it is obligatory to be hygienic from impurities⁸³ when performing the five daily obligatory prayers. One cannot stand before Allah, the Rabb of the entire creation in a contaminated state and pray. Even when one is hygienic, yet it is incumbent to perform the 'wuthu', i.e. the washing one's face, hands and feet before praying as taught by the Prophet. The Bible also states that Moses (pbuh) and Jesus (pbuh) washed their hands, face and feet before praying.

If one is in a state of ceremonial impurity, then one has to take a 'gusl', meaning a complete bath of the body from head to toe. Furthermore, non-Muslims may be surprised to discover that the Islamic way of cleanliness is the best way to fight many diseases. Water is the best medium to clean. A Muslim who visits the toilet has to wash the private parts with water after urinating⁸⁴ or/and passing stool. According to medical research⁸⁵, one of the most common ways of contracting polio is when the virus enters the body through contaminated food, dirty fingers and underneath finger nails wherein

82 The one who calls out to the faithful to come for Salaah

83 From drunkenness, ceremonial impurity, touching/playing with dogs etc

84 Males & females must sit and pass urine, because if urine spills onto the clothes or body, then washing off of same becomes incumbent before *wudhu* and *salaah*.

85 Ref: Sunday Times (S.A) April 2, 2006. The washing of hands has become an important issue among the medical professionals recently. In April 2007 it was reported on S.A. T.V. that medical doctors prescribed washing of hands a minimum of FIVE TIMES A DAY. Exact number of times a Muslim has to perform the ablution to do the 5 obligatory prayers each day!

excreta is stuck without one realizing it; or water tainted with sewerage. The virus attaches to receptors on the intestinal walls (oral polio attaches to the same ones) and from there it gets into the bloodstream. In 99% of the cases the virus causes no symptoms, or mild flu-like illness so it is very hard to detect until it affects a person.

In less than 1% of the cases, the virus attacks the central nervous system, destroying cells in the spinal cord. The death of the nerve cells causes muscle paralysis mostly in the legs. Even in people with no symptoms, the virus excreted in the feces can contaminate food and water. Therefore if one cleans oneself according to the manner taught in Islam when visiting the toilet: washing the private parts and washing the hands thereafter, then the risk is eliminated in contracting this disease. Furthermore, showering is the best manner of bathing as the water runs off the body, and not the way that the non-Muslims bathe, as they sit in the stagnant and unhygienic water. The Prophet has also taught to wash hands before and after eating as very important. Moreover he taught that one should not eat to his fill, but to eat about one third of his stomach size, drink liquid one third of his stomach size and leave the last one third empty so that there is freedom to breathe easily.

23. Question: WHY ARE NON-MUSLIMS NOT ALLOWED IN THE MUSLIM HOLY CITIES OF MAKKAH AND MADINAH?

Answer: It is true that non-Muslims are not allowed in the holy cities of Makkah and Madinah by Islamic law. The following points will serve to explain the reasoning behind such a restriction.

1. All citizens are not permitted in the cantonment area

In every country there are certain areas where a common citizen of one's own country cannot enter. Only a citizen who is enrolled in the military or those who are connected with the defence of the country are allowed in the cantonment area. *Examples:* The Pentagon, C.I.A. or F.B.I. in the U.S.A., and the army barracks or any similar institution of any country. Similarly, Islam is a Universal Religion for the entire world and for all human beings. The cantonment areas of Islam are the two holy cites of Makkah and Madinah. Here only those who believe in Islam i.e. the Muslims are allowed. It would be illogical for common citizens to object to the restriction on entering a cantonment area even in their own country. Similarly it is not fitting for non-

Muslims to object to the restriction on non-Muslims against entering Makkah and Madinah.

2. Visa to enter Makkah and Madinah

a. When a person travels to a foreign country he has to first apply for a visa to enter that country. Every country has its own rules, regulations and requirements for issuing a visa. Unless their criteria are satisfied they will not issue a visa to any applicant.

b. One of the countries very strict in issuing a visa is the United States of America, especially when issuing visas to citizens of the third world. They have many conditions and requirements to be fulfilled before they issue a visa.

c. When I visited Singapore, it was mentioned on their immigration form - death to drug traffickers. If I want to visit Singapore I have to abide by their rules. I cannot say that death penalty is a barbaric punishment. Only if I agree with their requirements and conditions will I be permitted to enter the country.

d. *The Visa to enter Makkah & Madinah - The primary condition required for any human being to enter Makkah & Madina is to believe sincerely and proclaim with his / her lips, "La ilaha illal'lahu Muhammadur Rasulullah" which means: 'there is no God but Allah and Muhammed (pbuh) is His Messenger.'*

24. Question: WHY IS PORK FORBIDDEN IN ISLAM?

Answer: The fact that consumption of pork is prohibited in Islam is very well known. The following points explain various aspects of this prohibition:

1. Pork prohibited in Qur'aan

The Qur'aan prohibits the consumption of pork in no less than 4 different places. It is prohibited in 2:173, 5:3, 6:145 and 16:115.

"Forbidden to you (for food) are: dead meat, blood, the flesh of swine, and that on which hath been invoked the name of other than Allah." (Al-Qur'aan 5:3)

The above verses of the Holy Qur'aan are sufficient to satisfy a Muslim as to why pork is forbidden.

2. Pork prohibited in the Bible

The Christians are likely to be convinced by their religious scriptures. The Bible also prohibits the consumption of pork:

“And the swine, though he divide the hoof, and be cloven footed, yet he cheweth not the cud; he is unclean to you”.

“Of their flesh shall ye not eat, and their carcass shall ye not touch, they are unclean to you.” [Leviticus 11:7-8]

“And the swine, because it divideth the hoof, yet cheweth not the cud, it is unclean unto you. Ye shall not eat of their flesh, nor touch their dead carcass.” (Deuteronomy 14:8)

A similar prohibition is repeated in the Bible in the *book of Isaiah chap 65, verse 4*; **“...which eat swine’s flesh, and broth of abominable things is in their vessels”.**

3. Consumption of pork causes many diseases: (Medical reasons)

Non-Muslims and atheists will agree only if convinced through reason, logic and science. Eating of pork can cause no less than seventy different types of diseases. A person can contract various helminthes like roundworm, pinworm, hookworm, etc. One of the most dangerous is *Taenia Solium*, which in layman’s terminology is called tapeworm. It harbours in the intestine and is very long. Its ova i.e. eggs, enter the blood stream and can reach almost all the organs of the body. If it enters the brain it can cause memory loss. If it enters the heart it can cause heart attack, if it enters the eye it can cause blindness, if it enters the liver it can cause liver damage. It can damage almost all the organs of the body. Another dangerous helminthes is *Trichura Tichurasis*. A common misconception about pork is that if it is cooked well, these ova die. In a research project undertaken in America, it was found that out of twenty-four people suffering from *Trichura Tichurasis*, twenty-two had cooked the pork very well. This indicates that the ova present in the pork do not die under normal cooking temperature.

4. Pork has over 90% fat building material

This fat gets deposited in the blood vessels and causes hypertension and heart attacks. Therefore it is not surprising that over 50% of Americans suffer from hypertension because of their love of pork!

5. Pig is one of the filthiest animals on earth

It lives and thrives on muck, faeces and dirt. It is the best scavenger on earth. In the villages they don’t have modern toilets and the villagers excrete in the open air, which is very often eaten by pigs. Some may argue that in advanced countries like Australia, pigs are bred in very

clean and hygienic conditions. Even in these hygienic conditions the pigs are kept together in sties. No matter how hard you try to keep them clean they are filthy by nature. They eat and enjoy their own as well as their neighbour's excreta.

6. Pig is the most shameless animal on the face of the earth. It is the only animal that invites its friends to have sex with its mate. In America most people consume pork. Many times after dance parties they have swapping of wives; i.e. "you sleep with my wife and I will sleep with your wife." *If you eat pigs then you behave like pigs.*

25. Question: **WHY IS ALCOHOL PROHIBITED IN ISLAM?**

Answer: Alcohol has been the scourge of human society since time immemorial. It continues to kill countless human lives, and causes terrible misery to millions throughout the world. Alcohol is the root cause of enormous problems facing society. The statistics of soaring crime rates, increasing instances of mental illnesses, and millions of broken homes throughout the world bear testimony to the destructive power of alcohol.

1. Prohibition of alcohol in the Qur'aan

The Glorious Qur'aan prohibits the consumption of alcohol

"O Ye who believe! Intoxicants and gambling, (dedication of) stones, and (divination by) arrows, are an abomination - of satan's handiwork; eschew such (abomination), that ye may prosper." Chap 5- verse: 90

2. Prohibition of alcohol in the Bible

The Bible prohibits the consumption of alcohol as well:

a. "Wine is a mocker, strong drink is raging; and whosoever is deceived thereby is not wise." (Proverbs 20:1)

b. "And be not drunk with wine." (Ephesians 5:18)

3. Alcohol inhibits the inhibitory centre

All human beings possess an inhibitory centre in their brains. This inhibitory centre prevents the person from doing things that he considers wrong. For instance, a person does not normally use abusive language while addressing his parents or elders. If he has to answer the call of nature, his inhibitory centre will prevent him from doing so in public, and therefore he uses the toilet.

When a person consumes alcohol, the inhibitory centre itself is inhibited. That is precisely the reason that a drunken person is often found to be indulging in behaviour that is completely uncharacteristic of him. For instance, the intoxicated person is found to use abusive and foul language and does not realize his mistake even if he is addressing his parents. Many even urinate and defecate in their clothes when drunk.

4. Cases of adultery, rape, incest and AIDS are found more among alcoholics

According to the National Crime Victimization Survey Bureau of Justice (U.S. Department of Justice) in the year **1996** alone, everyday an average **2, 713** rapes took place in America. The statistics prove that the majority of the rapists were **intoxicated** while committing the crime. According to statistics, 8% of Americans commit incest i.e. one in every twelve to thirteen persons in America is involved in incest. Almost all the cases of incest are due to **intoxication** of one or both the persons involved. One of the major factors associated with alcoholism is the spread of AIDS, the most dreaded disease of this century.

5. Every alcoholic was initially a social drinker

Many may argue in favour of liquor by calling themselves 'social drinkers'. They claim that they only have one or two drinks and they have self-control and so never get intoxicated. Investigations reveal that **every alcoholic started as a social drinker**. Not a single drunkard initially starts drinking with the intention of becoming a drunkard. No social drinker can say that I have been having alcohol for several years and that I have so much self-control that I have never been intoxicated even a single time.

6. If a person is intoxicated just once and commits something shameful, it will remain with him for a lifetime.

Suppose a 'social drinker' loses his self-control *just once* and in a state of intoxication he commits rape or incest. Even if the act is later regretted, a normal human being is likely to carry the guilt throughout his life. Both the perpetrator and the victim are irreparably and irreversibly damaged.

7. Alcohol is prohibited in the Hadith of the Prophet of Islam

a. In Sunan Ibn-I-Majah Volume 3, Book of Intoxicants, Chap 30 Hadith No. 3371. "*Alcohol is the mother of all evils and it is the most shameful of evils.*"

b. In Sunan Ibn-I-Majah Volume 3, Book of Intoxicants, Chap 30 Hadith No. 3392- "Anything which intoxicates in a large quantity is prohibited even in a small quantity." Thus there is no excuse for a nip or a tot.

c. Not only those who drink alcohol are cursed, but also Allah curses those who deal with it directly and indirectly. According to Sunan Ibn-I-Majah Volume 3, Book of Intoxicants, Chap 30 Hadith No. 3380 reported by Anas (may Allah be pleased with him), that Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) said:

"God's curse falls on ten groups of people who deal with alcohol. The one who distills it, the one for whom it has been distilled, the one who drinks it, the one who transports it, the one to whom it has been brought, the one whom serves it, the one who sells it, the one who utilizes money from it, the one who buys it and the one who buys it for someone else."

8. Some of the Diseases associated with alcoholism

There are dozens of scientific reasons for the prohibition of consumption of intoxicants (alcohol). *The maximum number of deaths in the world related to any one particular cause is due to the consumption of alcohol.* Millions of people die⁸⁶ every year only because of drinking alcohol. I need not go into the details of all the ill effects of alcohol since most of them are commonly known. Below is a list of just a few of the alcohol related illnesses:

1. Cirrhosis of Liver is the most common and well-known alcohol associated disease. Damage to the liver is irreversible.
2. Others are Cancer of Oesophagus, Cancer of Head and Neck, Cancer of Liver (Hepatoma), Cancer of Bowel, etc.
3. Oesophagitis, Gastritis, Pancreatitis and Hepatitis are linked with alcohol consumption.
4. Cardiomyopathy, Hypertension, Coronary Artherosclerosis, Angina and Heart Attacks are linked with heavy alcohol intakes.
5. Strokes, (even with moderate intake of alcohol) Apoplexy, Fits and different types of Paralysis are linked with alcohol intake.
6. Peripheral Neuropathy, Cortical Atrophy, Cerebellar Atrophy are well-known syndromes caused by alcohol consumption.
7. Wernicke - Korsakoff syndrome with amnesia of recent events, confabulations and retainment of memory to old events with

⁸⁶ Maximum number of road deaths in the world are directly related to alcohol

different types of paralysis are mainly due to thiamine deficiency due to excessive alcohol intake.

8. Beriberi and other deficiencies are not uncommon among alcoholics. Even Pellagra occurs in alcoholics.

9. Delirium Tremens is a serious complication that may occur during recurrent infection of alcoholics or post operatively. It also occurs during abstinence as a sign of withdrawal effect. It is quite serious and may cause death even if treated in well-equipped centres.

10. Numerous Endocrine Disorders have been associated with alcoholism ranging from Myxedema to Hyperthyroidism and Florid Cushing Syndrome.

11. Hematological ill effects are long and variable. Folic acid deficiency, however, is the most common manifestation of alcoholic abuse resulting in Macrocytic Anemia. Zeive's syndrome is a triad of Hemolytic Anemia, Jaundice and Hyperlipaemia that follows alcoholic binges.

12. Thrombocytopenia and other platelet abnormalities are not rare in alcoholics.

13. The commonly used tablet metronidazole (flagyl) interacts badly with alcohol.

14. Recurrent infection is very common among chronic alcoholics. The resistance to disease and the immunological defense system are compromised by alcohol intake.

15. Chest infections are notorious in alcoholics. Pneumonia, Lung Abscess, Emphysema and Pulmonary Tuberculosis are all common in alcoholics.

16. During acute alcoholic intoxication, the drunken person usually vomits; the cough reflexes that are protective are paralyzed. The vomitus thus easily passes to the lung causing Pneumonia or Lung Abscess. Occasionally it may even cause suffocation and death.

17. The ill effects of alcohol consumption on women deserve special mention. Females are more vulnerable to alcohol-related Cirrhosis than men. During pregnancy alcohol consumption has a severe detrimental effect on the foetus. Foetal Alcohol Syndrome is being recognised more and more in the medical profession.

18. Skin diseases are also related to alcohol indulgence.

19. Eczema, Alopecia, Nail Dystrophy, Paronychia (infection around the nails) and Angular Stomatitis (inflammation of the angle of the mouth) are common diseases among alcoholics.

9. Alcoholism a 'disease'?

Medical doctors have now turned liberal towards alcoholics and call alcoholism a disease.

10. Alcohol is detrimental to a person's health when flying in airplanes as has been recently discovered. So as can be understood, alcohol is a danger to human beings health in all aspects.

If alcohol is a disease, then it is the only disease that:

1- Is sold in bottles!

2- Is advertised in newspapers, magazines, on radio and television!

3- Has licensed outlets to spread it!

4- Produces revenue for the government!

5- Brings violent deaths on the highways!

6- Destroys family life and increases crime!

7- Has no germs or viral cause!

Alcoholism Is Not A Disease – It Is Satan's Handiwork

Islam is called the "Deen-ul-Fitrah" or the natural religion of man. All its injunctions are aimed at preserving the natural state of man. Alcohol is a deviation from this natural state, for the individual as well as for society. It degrades man to a level below that of the beasts he claims to be superior to. Hence the consumption of alcohol is prohibited in Islam.

It was reported on Al-Jazeera English Service News on the 16/6/2007 at 10.40 GMT: "43% of Russian men die at about 59 years of age due to excessive drinking". That is nearly half of the population of men in Russia die disgracefully due to drinking this poison.

In the fairly recent scientific study undertaken by **Dr. ROD JACKSON**, from the University of Auckland, New Zealand, published in the respected Medical Journal, The Lancet states: 'Any benefit from light to moderate drinking is probably very small and unlikely to outweigh the harm caused by alcohol. Alcohol abuse harms almost every organ in the body, causing problems such as cirrhosis of the liver, pancreatitis, stomach bleeding, high blood pressure, stroke, nerve damage, osteoporosis and dementia. (W/End Argus- 3/12/2005)

After spending years in research and millions of dollars, Dr. Jackson reached the conclusion of what ALLAH has informed humankind in the Glorious Qur'aan through his last and final messenger, Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) 1,400 years ago.

In his book titled 'The Trouble with Medicine' Dr. Melvin Konner (published by the B.B.C. in London) states the following comment by Dr. Paul Oursler who is a senior resident doctor:

"Unfortunately, a lot of what we do here has to do with people who have had a problem with alcoholism, drug abuse, smoking... We spend huge resources in order to take care of the acute problem, and yet we are pulling those resources away from Preventative Measures Which Would Really Work".

Allah has given the believers that preventative measure in just one verse of the Glorious Qur'aan in chap 5 verse 90.

"O Ye who believe! Intoxicants and gambling, (dedication of) stones, and (divination by) arrows, are an abomination – of satan's handiwork; eschew such (abomination), that ye may prosper".

26. Question: WHY DO WOMEN INHERIT HALF OF WHAT A MAN INHERITS UNDER ISLAMIC SHARIAH?

Answer: 1. Inheritance in the Qur'aan

The Glorious Qur'aan contains specific and detailed guidance regarding the division of the inherited wealth, among the rightful beneficiaries.

The Qur'aanic verses that contain guidance regarding inheritance are:

* Surah Baqarah, chap 2 verse 180 and 240

* Surah Nisa, chap 4 verse 7-9, 19 and 33

* Surah Maidah, chap 5 verse 106-108

2. Specific share of inheritance for the relatives

There are three verses in the Qur'aan that broadly describe the share of close relatives i.e. **Surah Nisah (chap 4) verses 11, 12 and 176.**

3. Female sometimes inherits the same or more than male:

In most of the cases, a woman inherits half of what her male counterpart inherits. However, this is not always the case. In case the deceased has left no ascendant or descendent but has left a uterine brother and sister, each of the two inherits one sixth.

If the deceased has left children, then parents, the mother and father also get an equal share and inherit one sixth each. In certain cases, a woman can also inherit a share that is double that of the male. If the deceased is a woman who has left no children, brothers or sisters and is survived only by her husband, mother and father, the husband inherits half the property while the mother inherits one third and the father the remaining one sixth. In this particular case, the mother inherits a share that is double that of the father.

4. Female usually inherits half the share of that of the male:

It is true that as a general rule, in most cases, the female inherits a share that is half that of the male. For instance in the following cases:

1. Daughter inherits half of what the son inherits.
2. Wife inherits 1/8th and husband 1/4th if the deceased has no children.
3. Wife inherits 1/4th and husband 1/2 if the deceased has children
4. If the deceased has no ascendant or descendent, the sister inherits a share that is half that of the brother.

5. Male inherits double than the female because he financially supports the family.

In Islam a woman has no financial obligation and the economic responsibility lies on the shoulders of the man. Before a woman is married it is the duty of the father or brother to look after the lodging, boarding, clothing and other financial requirements of the woman. After she is married it is the duty of the husband or the son. Islam holds the man financially responsible for fulfilling the needs of his family. In order to be able to fulfill the responsibility, men get double the share of the inheritance.

For example, if a man dies leaving about \$150,000.00 for the children (i.e one son and one daughter), the son inherits \$100,000.00 and the daughter only \$50,000.00. Out of the \$100,000.00 that the son inherits, because of his duty towards his family he may have to spend on them almost the entire amount and thus in reality he has a smaller percentage of inheritance left for him. On the other hand, the daughter, who inherits \$50,000.00, is not bound to spend a single penny on anybody. She can keep the entire amount for herself.

Would you prefer inheriting one hundred thousand and spending almost all on the family from it, or inheriting fifty thousand and having the entire amount to yourself?

For men is the benefit of what they earn. And for women is the benefit of what they earn. Q.4:32

For men is a share of what the parents and the near relatives leave, and for women a share of what the parents and the near relatives leave, whether it be little or much and appointed share. Q-4:7

27. Question: HOW CAN A MUSLIM PROVE THE EXISTENCE OF THE HEREAFTER? AND WHAT DOES THE QUR'AAN SAY IS THE REASON FOR HUMAN BEINGS EXISTENCE?

Answer: Belief in the hereafter (life after death) is not based on blind faith for Muslims. Many people wonder as to how a person with a scientific and logical temperament, can lend any credence to the belief of life after death. People assume that anyone believing in the hereafter is doing so on the basis of blind belief. As a Muslim my belief in the hereafter is based on a reasonable and logical argument.

A Muslim's logical belief in the hereafter

There are more than 1,000 verses in the Glorious Qur'aan pertaining to scientific facts.⁸⁷ Many of these scientific facts mentioned in the Qur'aan have been discovered in the last few centuries. The specifics regarding Embryology have been discovered only in the last 30 years, yet *the most detailed stages of the creation of a human being has been stated in the Glorious Qur'aan more than 1,400 years ago.* However, science has not advanced to a level where it can confirm every statement of the Qur'aan.

Take the following example: Suppose 80% of all that is mentioned in the Qur'aan has been proved 100% correct. About the remaining 20%, science makes no categorical statement, since it has not yet advanced to a level where it can either prove or disprove these statements. With the limited knowledge that we have, we cannot say for certain whether even a single percentage or a single verse of the Qur'aan from this 20% portion is wrong. Thus when 80% of the Qur'aan is 100% correct and the remaining 20% is not disproved; logic dictates that even the 20% portion is correct. The existence of the hereafter, which is mentioned in the Qur'aan, falls in the 20% ambiguous portion, which any reasonable logical person will say is correct.

87 Refer to Dr. Zakir's book "Qur'aan and Modern Science-Compatible or Incompatible?" or go to www.irf.net to download a free copy

“Every soul shall have a taste of death: and only on the Day of Judgement shall you be paid your full recompense. Only he who is saved far from the Fire and admitted to the Garden will have attained the object (of life): for the life of this world is but goods and chattels of deception.” (Al-Qur’aan 3:185)

Final justice will be meted out on the Day of Judgement. After a person dies, he will be resurrected on the Day of Judgement along with the rest of mankind and the final reward and punishment will be meted out in the hereafter.

Concerning the reason of human beings existence, it is stated in the Glorious Qur’aan in chap 51, verse 56: **“I (Allah) have not created jinn and humankind, except for My worship.”**

In Islam, worship has a very wide meaning. It is not confined to only praying in a mosque or home. *The most important factor of worship or any action is the intention behind the action. The Prophet said that “actions will be judged according to the intention”.* Providing the intention is to please Allah then a person will be rewarded as if he is engaged in worship whilst feeding and clothing one’s family, looking after one’s parents, being kind to all, removing any injurious article from the wayside, giving good advice and so on. Even to have intimate relations with one’s wife is also an act of worship, while committing adultery will be punishable. One can see that prayer is all-inclusive in Islam. Contrast that with Christianity where having relations with one’s own wife is considered something dirty.

28. Question: WHEN ALL THE MUSLIMS FOLLOW THE SAME QUR’AAN, WHY ARE THERE SO MANY SECTS AMONG MUSLIMS?

Answer: 1. Muslims should be united

The faith of Islam is one and all sects of Islam are one so far as the essential doctrines of Islam are concerned. There are differences in interpretation but they all relate to minor and secondary points.

“And hold fast, all together, by the rope which Allah (stretches out for you), and be not divided among yourselves;”

Glorious Qur’aan chap 3: verse 103

The rope that Allah refers to in this verse is the Glorious Qur’aan, which all Muslims should hold fast together. There is double emphasis in this verse. Besides saying ‘hold fast all together’ it also says, ‘be not divided’. The Glorious Qur’aan further says:

“Obey Allah, and obey the Messenger” (Al-Qur’aan 4:59)

“Say: (O Muhammed to mankind): If you love Allah, follow me; Allah will love you and forgive you your sins, Allah is Forgiving, Merciful”. (Al-Qur’aan 3, verse 31)

2. It is prohibited to make sects and divisions in Islam:

“As for those who divide their religion and break up into sects, thou hast no part in them in the least: Their affair is with Allah: He will in the end tell them the truth of all that they did.” (Al-Qur’aan 6:159)

3. Our Prophet was a Muslim

It is mentioned in chap 3 verse 52 of Al-Qur’aan that Jesus (pbuh) was a Muslim. Further, in chap 3 verse 67, Al-Qur’aan says that Prophet Ebrahim was not a Jew, nor a Christian, but was a Muslim.

4. Qur’aan says: call yourself a Muslim

a. If anyone poses a Muslim the question “who are you”, the answer should be: “I am a **MUSLIM**”. Not that I am a Hanafi or a Shafi.

“Who is better in speech than one who calls (men) to Allah; works righteousness and says: ‘I am of those who bow in Islam (Muslim)?’ (Surah Fussilat chap 41 verse 33) say, “I am a Muslim”.

b. The Prophet dictated letters to non-Muslim kings and rulers inviting them to accept Islam. In these letters he mentioned the verse of the Qur’aan from Surah Ali Imran:

Say ye: “Bear witness that we (at least) are Muslims (bowing to Allah’s will).” (Al-Qur’aan 3 verse 64)

5. Respect all the Great Scholars of Islam:

We must respect all the great scholars of Islam, including the four Imams. They were great scholars and may Allah reward them for their research and hard work. One can have no objection if someone agrees with the views and research of Imam Abu Hanifa or Imam Shafi, etc. But when posed a question, ‘who are you?’ the reply should only be ‘**I am a Muslim**’.

The Glorious Qur’aan commands us not to create sects. Those who follow the teachings of the Qur’aan and Sahih Hadith, and do not create sects are the people who are on the true path. According to Tirmidhi Hadith No. 171, the Prophet is reported to have said:

“My Ummah will be fragmented into seventy-three sects, and all of them will be in Hell fire except one sect.” The companions asked

Allah's messenger who that group would be. Whereupon he replied, *"It is the one to which I and my companions belong."*

This hadith reports that the Prophet predicted the emergence of seventy-three sects. He did not say that Muslims should be active in dividing themselves into sects.

The Glorious Qur'aan mentions in many verses, "Obey Allah and obey His Messenger". A true Muslim should only follow the Glorious Qur'aan and the Sahih Hadith. He can agree with the views of any scholar as long as they conform to the teachings of the Qur'aan and Sahih Hadith. If such views go against the Word of Allah, or the Authentic Sunnah of His Prophet, then they must be disregarded regardless of how learned the scholar might be. Muslims should read the Qur'aan with understanding, and adhere to the Sahih Hadith, then insha-Allah most of these differences would be resolved, and Muslims can be one united Muslim Ummah.

All the Muslims should follow the Qur'aan and not be divided.

29. Question: ALL RELIGIONS BASICALLY TEACH THEIR FOLLOWERS TO DO GOOD DEEDS. WHY SHOULD A PERSON ONLY FOLLOW ISLAM?

Answer: 1. There are major differences between Islam and other religions. All religions basically exhort mankind to be righteous and shun evil, but Islam goes beyond that. It guides us towards practical ways of achieving righteousness and eliminating evil from our individual and collective lives. Islam takes into account human nature and the complexities of human society. Islam is guidance from the Creator Himself; therefore, Islam is also called the Deenul-Fitrah (the natural religion of Man).

a. Islam prescribes Zakat (obligatory wealth tax):

Islam prescribes a system of Zakat Islamic Law. Every person who has a saving that exceeds the 'nisab' level i.e. more than 85 grams of gold, should give 2.5% of that saving every lunar year in charity. If every rich person in the world gave the proper amount of Zakat sincerely, poverty will be eradicated from this world and not a single human being would die of hunger.

b. Islam prescribes method of eliminating robbery:

All major religions instruct that theft is an evil act. Islam teaches the same. The difference lies in the fact that besides teaching that robbing is evil and should be shunned; Islam shows practical ways of creating

a social structure in which people will not rob and live in a safe environment. Islam prescribes chopping off the hands of the **convicted robber**. The Glorious Qur'aan says in Surah Maidah:

“As to the thief, male or female, cut off his or her hands: a punishment by way of example, from Allah, for their crime: and Allah is Exalted in power, full of wisdom.” (Al-Qur'aan 5:38)

2. Islam prohibits the molestation and rape of women. It enjoins hijab and prescribes capital punishment for a convicted rapist, and prescribes method of eliminating molestation and rape: Refer to Question number 16 for full details on Hijab and the Qur'aanic injunctions and its benefits.

3. Islam has Practical Solutions for the Problems of Mankind

“ O mankind, surely We have created you from a male and a female, and made you tribes and families that you may know each other. Surely the noblest of you with Allah is the most dutiful of you. Surely Allah is Knowing, Aware”. Qur'aan Chap 49 v. 13

The principle of the brotherhood laid down here is on the broadest basis. The address here is not to believers, but to human kind in general, who are told that they are all members of one family, and their divisions into nations, tribes and families should not lead to estrangement from, but to a better knowledge of each other. Superiority of one over another in this vast brotherhood does not depend on nationality, wealth, or rank, but on the careful observance of duty, or moral greatness.

CHAPTER 2: COMMON QUESTIONS ASKED BY CHRISTIANS ABOUT THE CONCEPT OF GOD

30. Question: THE QUR'AAN SAYS THAT MARY (PBUH) WAS THE SISTER OF AARON. WE KNOW THAT MARY (PBUH) WAS THE MOTHER OF JESUS (PBUH), AND THE TIME SPAN BETWEEN AARON AND MARY (PBUH) WAS ABOUT A THOUSAND YEARS. PLEASE EXPLAIN.

Answer: In the **Semitic** languages sister also means descendant, just as Prophet Abraham is known as “Father Abraham” to the Bani Israel and the Arabs.

“At length she brought the (babe) to her people, carrying him (in her arms). They said: ‘O Mary (pbuh)! Truly an amazing thing hast thou brought! O sister of Aaron! Thy father was not a man of evil, nor thy mother a woman unchaste!’” (Surah Maryam, Ch.19 vs. 27-28)

Christian missionaries allege that Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) did not know the difference between Mary (pbuh) the mother of Jesus (pbuh), and Miriam the sister of Aaron, because the time span between them is more than a thousand years. What they are uninformed of is that in the Arabic language, sister is also considered as a descendant. Thus, when the people said to Mary (pbuh), “Ya Ukhta Haroon” i.e. ‘O sister of Aaron’ it actually means descendant of Aaron. Let us look to the following examples:

SON ALSO MEANS DESCENDANT

“Jesus Christ, the son of David...” (Mathew 1:1)

“And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph,” (Luke 3:23)

BIBLE STATES - JESUS (PBUH) HAD “FATHERS”

The explanation of the phrase that Jesus was the ‘son of David’ (pbuh) is that Jesus (pbuh) was a *descendant* of David. ‘Son’ here means a descendant. Also Prophet Ebrahim (Abraham) is referred to as “Father Ebrahim”. So in the Semitic languages the grandfather and great grandfathers are referred to as fathers as well.

John 8:39 - They (the Bani Israel) answered and said unto him (Jesus), Abraham is our father.

MATT 23:9 And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven.

The mother of Jesus (pbuh) was from the priestly family of Aaron and Moses (pbut). That is why she is referred to as ‘sister of Aaron’ in the above verse of the Qur’aan. In the same manner Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) referred to the previous prophets as brothers as in one “One Brotherhood” as all were given the same fundamental message of the ONENESS OF GOD!

31. Question: IS IT TRUE THAT YOUR QUR’AAN MENTIONS IN SURAH MARYAM (PBUH), CHAP 19, VERSE 33 THAT JESUS⁸⁸ (PBUH) DIED AND WAS RESURRECTED?

⁸⁸ ‘Isa’ is the Arabic form of the Hebrew ‘Yoshua’; Jesus being the Greek form of the same name; and Ibn Maryam, or son of Mary, is a surname

Answer: It is mentioned in Surah Maryam (pbuh), Chap 19 verse 33: Jesus (pbuh) said: "**So Peace is on me the day I was born, the day that I die* and the Day that I shall be raised up to life (again)**". (Al-Qur'aan 19:33)

It does not state: "the day that I died". * *It is in the future tense and not in the past tense*. There is no mention of 'crucifixion' and 'resurrection' or any other man made doctrines. Birth and Death is ordained for all human beings, and this verse that Jesus (pbuh) spoke as recorded in the Qur'aan proves his status as a mortal- that he is subject to death when Allah ordains it for him on his return to earth before the end of time.

Jesus (pbuh) was raised up alive:

"That they (the Jews) said (in boast), 'We killed⁸⁹ Christ Jesus the son of Mary, the Messenger of Allah' - But they killed him not, nor crucified him, but so it was made to appear to them, and those who differ therein are full of doubts, with no (certain) knowledge, but only conjecture to follow, for of a surety they killed him not - Nay, Allah raised him up unto Himself; and Allah is exalted in Power, Wise." (Al-Qur'aan 4:157-158)

32. Question: YOUR QUR'AAN MENTIONS THAT JESUS (PBUH) IS 'KALIMATULLAH', WHICH MEANS "THE WORD OF ALLAH"- AND ALSO AS 'RUHULLAH' WHICH MEANS "THE SPIRIT OF ALLAH": IS THAT NOT INDICATING HIS DIVINITY?

Answer: The Qur'aan says Jesus (pbuh) "is a word from Allah".

"Behold! The angels said: O Mary (pbuh)! Allah giveth thee glad tidings of a Word from Him: his name will be Christ Jesus (pbuh). The son of Mary (pbuh) held in honour in this world and in the Hereafter and of (*the company of*) those nearest to Allah. (Al-Qur'aan 3:45)

If a person is referred to as "**a word**" from Allah, it means that he is a Messenger of Allah. In chap 7 verse 144, it states that Allah spoke directly with Moses (pbuh) and had chosen him (during Moses's time) "**O Moses (pbuh)! I have chosen thee above (other) men, by the**

⁸⁹ The Bible states -'All his disciples forsook him and fled'. So it is impossible for any of the disciples to bear witness in their gospels to the crucifixion as they were not present at the happening. Yet the Gospels contain information about the 'crucifixion' by these disciples as if they were present- refer to: *Matt ch 26, v, 56 & Mark ch 14, v, 50*

messages I (have given thee⁹⁰) and the words I have spoken to thee: take then the revelation which I give thee and be of those who give thanks”.

The title of a Prophet does not mean that it exclusively belongs to that Prophet. Different titles are mentioned for the different prophets in the Glorious Qur’aan. Whenever a title is given to a prophet it does not necessarily mean that the other prophets do not have the same characteristic or quality. E.g. Prophet Abraham is referred to in the Qur’aan as “Khaleelullah”, meaning a ‘friend of Allah.’ This does not mean that all the other Prophets were not the friends of Allah. Prophet Moses (pbuh) is referred to in the Qur’aan as “Kaleemullah”, indicating that God spoke to him. This does not mean that God did not speak to the other Prophets. Similarly when Jesus (pbuh) is referred to in the Qur’aan as “*Kalimatullah*”, “*a word from Allah*”, it does not mean that the other Prophets were not “the word” of Allah. Every Prophet is “a word of Allah” as each was entrusted with the message of Allah to give to his nation⁹¹.

Yahya i.e. John the Baptist is also referred to in the Qur’aan as “Kalimatullah” i.e. a word of Allah in, Chap 3, verses 38-40:

There did Zachariah pray to his Lord. He said: My Lord, grant me from Thee goodly offspring; surely Thou art the Hearer of prayer. So the angels called to him as he stood praying in the sanctuary: Allah gives thee the good news of John, verifying a word from Allah and honourable and chaste and a prophet from among the good ones. He said: My Lord, how can I have a son when old age has already come upon me, and my wife is barren? He said: Even thus does Allah do what He pleases”.

Prophet Zachariah was 110 years old, and his noble wife was 90 years old and they were past childbearing age. This is a very important point, because the birth of prophet Yahya was also *miraculous* in that

90 This does not imply that only Moses received a message, but it implies that at the time of Moses only he received the message directly from Allah. Just as all the other prophets during their time also received messages from Allah for their people’s guidance. However, the last and final message, Al-Qur’aan was given to the last and final messenger, Muhammed. This is stated emphatically in the Qur’aan that no new message and no new messenger is to come after Muhammed and the Glorious Qur’aan!

91 Only Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) was entrusted with a message **for all of mankind** as is mentioned many times in the Glorious Qur’aan. A few references from the Glorious Qur’aan: *Chap 7 vs. 157 & 158; chapter 21.v 107; chapter 34 v. 28* and many others.

both his parents were old. The wife of Prophet Zachariah was barren as the verse above states.

In the case of Mary (pbuh), the mother of Jesus (pbuh), she was young. However, for her to conceive without any male intervention is also a miracle. So in fact both births were miraculous.

Glorious Qur'aan-Chap 3 v 45 -48: When the angels said: O Mary, surely Allah gives thee good news with a word from Him (of one) whose name is the Messiah, Jesus, son of Mary, worthy of regard in this world and the Hereafter, and of those who are drawn near (to Allah) And he will speak to the people when in the cradle and when of old age, and (he will be) one of the good ones. She said: My Lord, how can I have a son and man has not yet touched me? He said: even so; Allah creates what He pleases. When He decrees a matter, He only says to it, Be! And it is. And He will teach him the Book and the Wisdom and the Torah and the Gospel:

Jesus (pbuh) referred as 'Ruhullah'

Jesus (pbuh) is also referred to as "a spirit proceeding from Allah": "**O People of the Book! Commit no excesses in your religion, nor say of Allah aught but the truth. Jesus Christ the son of Mary was (no more than) a Messenger of Allah and His word, which He bestowed on Mary, and a Spirit proceeding from Him: so believe in Allah and His Messengers: say not 'Trinity'; desist: it will be better for you: for Allah is One God: glory be to Him: (*far exalted is He*) above having a son. To Him belong all things in the heavens and on earth. And enough is Allah as a Disposer of affairs."** (*Al-Qur'aan 4:171*)

A spirit from Allah does not indicate that Jesus (pbuh) is God.

"When I have fashioned him (Adam) (in due proportion) and breathed into him of My spirit, fall ye down in obeisance unto him." (*Al-Qur'aan 15:29*)

"Then He made him complete and breathed into him of His spirit, and gave you ears and eyes and hearts; little it is that you give thanks!" (*Al-Qur'aan 32:9*)

This verse demonstrates that the spirit of God is breathed into every man. It is a mystical relation between human nature and Divine nature. The word 'ruh' distinguishes man from the animal world.

Mr. S. Mufassir notes in his book, 'Biblical Studies from a Muslim Perspective': Jesus (pbuh) is referred to as 'Andhra apo tou Theou', which means '*a man from God*'. Not once do these early confessions of faith use the expression, '*wios tou theou*' which would mean '*son*

of God'. This is recorded in the New Testament, Book of Acts 2:22-dated about 33 C.E. which is older than most of the N. T. Gospels!

Quotes from Christian Scholars about the bible:

Hastings in 'The Dictionary of the Bible says: "*It is doubtful whether Jesus used the expression 'son of God' to refer to himself.*" Adrian Thatcher writes in his book- '*Truly a Person, Truly God*' (London: SPCK, 1990) P.77. - "*There is scarcely a single competent New Testament Scholar who is prepared to defend the view that the four instances of the absolute use of "I am" in John, or indeed most of the other uses, can be historically attributed to Jesus.*"

David Brown in his book titled, '*The Divine Trinity*' writes: "**There is good evidence to suggest that Jesus never saw himself as a suitable object of worship,**"

Michael Ramsey writes in his book, '*Jesus and the Living Past*'- (1980) pages 39 to 43: "***Jesus did not claim deity for himself***". He goes further and writes: "*The title 'son of god' need not of it-self be of high significance, for in Jewish circles it might mean no more than the Messiah or indeed the whole of the Israelite nation, and in popular Hellenism there were many sons of God, meaning inspired holy men.*"

Brian Hebblewaite admits in his book, '*The Incarnation*' page 74, printed in 1987 that: **It is no longer possible to defend the divinity of Jesus by reference to the claims of Jesus**.⁹²

It would be fitting to mention here that the Christian missionaries⁹³ are very deceitful in their scheming by quoting from the Qur'aan about the miraculous birth of Jesus (pbuh) which Muslims believe in, and then go on to distort the meaning deliberately of other verses of the Qur'aan to try and

92 **The miraculous birth of Jesus can only be proven through the Glorious Qur'aan.** If it had not been stated in the Glorious Qur'aan, Muslims would not have believed in it, and there would have been no proof whatsoever for the Christian world. The reason is that the Bible's evidence cannot be relied on as stated even by Christian Scholars. **The Christian world owes an unrepayable debt to the Glorious Qur'aan, which is the true Word of Allah.**

93 The Jehovah's witnesses are another example of deceitful and shrewd characters. When cornered they will refuse to answer the question and will bring in red herrings to duck and dive the question. They will force Muslims to accept their literature but will never accept Islamic literature. They always move in mixed groups of males & females and in most cases unmarried. Is this not against the teachings of Jesus? Did he not say that to look and lust after a woman is as good as committing adultery? Is it possible that moving together they are so saintly that they can control themselves?

substantiate some arguments of theirs. This demands answers to the following questions:

- Why do you quote from the Glorious Qur'aan when you do not believe in the Glorious Qur'aan?
 - There is no reference in your Bible giving you any authority to quote from the Glorious Qur'aan.
 - In fact no Christian can quote even one verse from the Glorious Qur'aan, as your Bible does not consent to, or sanction you to quote anything at all from the Glorious Qur'aan! The reason is self-evident- Jesus came approx 600 years **before** Prophet Muhammed.
 - If you disagree, then kindly show us proof from your Bible to substantiate your argument that Christians can quote from the Glorious Qur'aan. All the thousands of versions of Bibles that are in circulation all over the world are untrustworthy witnesses to the miraculous birth of Jesus (pbuh.) Not even one will stand up as a trustworthy witness in any court of law anywhere in the world. *Why do I say this?* In any court of law, if a witness is established to be lying, fabricating evidence, contradicting other witnesses and generally saying things that can easily be disproved, then the Judge in the case will refuse to accept any testimony from the witness. In exactly this approach, the Bible has been found to be a totally unreliable witness by stating incorrect facts on all branches of science, having more than **50,000 errors**, (see Question 49) hundreds of contradictions, hundreds of absurdities, no two Gospels writers are in agreement with important issues, dozens of incest, horrible accusations against the Prophets of God etc. No judge will accept the testimony of all the Bibles in the world due to this over whelming evidence of untruths etc mentioned above.
 - **The Christian world has no solid proof whatsoever to prove even the miraculous birth of Jesus (pbuh)! The only sure way for Christians to prove the miraculous birth of Prophet Jesus (pbuh) is to submit to the Glorious Qur'aan as a witness!**
 - A very tiny number of the fabrications, interpolations, contradictions and corruptions of the Bible are mentioned in this book. It would take more than ten volumes of a thousand pages each to list every fabrication, interpolation, contradiction and corruption of the Bible, old and new.
- (a) We ask the missionaries and born agians to refrain from quoting from the Qur'aan to Muslims. They have no authority to do so, unless

they accept the Qur'aan as the final and perfect revelation from Allah, which it has proved to be; and to stop preaching about original sin and blood of Christ to Muslims, which cannot be proven by the words of JESUS himself in the Bible! They quote Paul who was never a disciple of Jesus (pbuh)!

(b) However, if the testimony of the Glorious Qur'aan is tested in any court of law, in any country, any Judge will accept the testimony of the Qur'aan as every statement will be proved true and correct, and on the basis of all the testimony being 100% correct, any Judge will have no hesitation in accepting the miraculous birth of Jesus (pbuh) and that he was never crucified! Christians must take cognizance of the fact that the Glorious Qur'aan clearly warns against the belief of the trinity and that Jesus was God, or son of God! Allah will never forgive this blasphemy as stated in chap.4 v. 48 of the Glorious Qur'aan!

On the other hand Muslims have the authority to quote from the Bible to prove the Bible has been interpolated and corrupted. This is clearly stated in the Glorious Qur'aan⁹⁴, in chap 2 verse 79,

“Woe! Then to those who write the Book with their hands then say, this is from Allah; so that they may take for it a small price. Woe! to them for what their hands write and woe! to them for what they earn”.

(ii) The Glorious Qur'aan refers to Jesus (pbuh) in the following verses⁹⁵ of the Qur'aan, and on the basis of this proof from Allah; Muslims are compelled to quote and disprove all the interpolations and additions that have been introduced into the Bible in discussions with Christians:

Chap 3: vs. 64 - 80; vs.98-99; vs.113-115; vs. 186-187; v.199;

Chap 4: vs. 47; 153 - 161 & Chap 5: vs. 64-66; v.69

Chap 6: v. 20 & Chap 19: vs. 88 - 92

Chap 18: vs. 4 - 5 & Chap 10: vs. 68 - 70

Chap 61 verse 6 of the Glorious Qur'aan states (1) the Injeel (Good News) was given to Prophet Jesus (pbuh) , (2) Jesus (pbuh) states

⁹⁴ The Glorious Qur'aan is also known as the **Furqaan**, which means the 'Criterion to judge the true from the false'. The Glorious Qur'aan is also known as **Musaddiq**, which means -confirming the truth of previous revelations. The Glorious Qur'aan has admirably weeded out the interpolations and corrupt text of the Bibles.

⁹⁵ The verses quoted above are just a few of them.

clearly the coming of Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) , (3) Jesus (pbuh) also states that he is confirming the Law (At Taurat) that was given to Moses (pbuh) and he came to follow the Law!

“They say: ‘(Allah) Most Gracious has begotten a son! Indeed ye have put forth a thing most monstrous! Whereby the skies are ready to burst, the earth to split asunder, and the mountains to fall down in utter ruin. That they should invoke a son for (Allah) Most Gracious-for it is not consonant with the majesty of (Allah) Most Gracious that He should beget a son.” (Al-Qur’aan 19:88-92⁹⁶)

“The Jews say: “The Christians have naught⁹⁷ to (stand) upon”, and the Christians say: “The Jews have naught to (stand) upon”. Yet they (profess) to study the (same) Book...” (Al-Qur’aan chap 2.v. 113)

If you still insist on quoting from the Qur’aan then you will have to accept the entire Qur’aan, as it is the only Scripture which is pure as it was revealed in Arabic, as has been acknowledged by unbiased Christians Scholars⁹⁸, and read the following verses as a warning to you: *“O you who believe! Lo! Many of the (Jewish) rabbis and the (Christian) monks⁹⁹ (priests) devour the wealth of mankind wantonly and debar (men) from the way of Allah. They hoard up gold and silver and spend it not in the way of Allah; unto them give tidings (O Muhammed) of a painful doom.” (Qur’aan Chap 9 v. 34)*

“And your God (Allah) is One God (Allah): there is no god but He, Most Gracious, Most Merciful”. (Al-Qur’aan Chap 2 v 163)

33. Question: WHAT DOES ISLAM SAY ABOUT TRINITY?

Answer: 1. This word ‘Trinity’ is not mentioned even once in the Bible, although it is one of the cornerstones of the Christian Church’s doctrines! I repeat that the word Trinity is not mentioned even once in the entire Bible, whether in the Old or New Testaments. Yet the

96 The same message is repeated in: chap. 5, vs. 72-74; chap. 18, vs. 4-5; chap. 4, v 48; chap. 2, v 255 and chap.4, v 171.

97 Nothing (no basis). Both claim to study the same Book but they reject each other’s belief. Jews believe in one God. Christians believe in three Gods.

98 Refer to the section: What the critics have to say about the Glorious Qur’aan on the Authenticity of the Qur’aan by Muir, etc

99 In a B.B.C. Radio news report on 21 Oct 2006, it was reported that the Monks in Greece have been charged with stealing money from the bank accounts of the Monastery and are rebelling against the Patriarch Bartholomew. Off course, this stealing has been taking place for more than two thousand years, and will continue as long as there is this hierarchy of the priests, cardinals and Popehood.

ordinary Christian is tricked into believing that it is declared in the Bible as a doctrine and that they have to believe in it.

The word 'trinity' is mentioned in the Glorious Qur'aan in the following places as a dire warning to the Christians:

"Say not 'trinity', desist: It will be better for you, for Allah is one God." (Al-Qur'aan 4:171)

A similar message is repeated in *Surah Maidah chap 5, verse 73*:

"They do blaspheme who say Allah is one of three in a Trinity: for there is no god except One God. If they desist not from their word (of blasphemy), verily a grievous penalty will befall the blasphemers among them."

2. The verse in the Bible which is closest to "Trinity" which is often quoted by Christian missionaries is the *first Epistle of John, chap 5, verse 7*: "*For there are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word and the Holy Ghost; and these three are one*".

But lo and behold this verse has now been thrown out of the Bible by the learned men of Christendom themselves as a fabrication and as an interpolation!

ENCYCLOPEDIA BRITANNICA (1976), page 241 states:

"Biblical Basis- neither the word 'Trinity' nor the explicit doctrine as such appears at any one place in the Bible...."

Important note: This verse that is of such importance to the Christian faith has been removed as an interpolation, as a fabrication and as a concoction. It has not been expunged from the Revised Standard Version of the Bible by the Muslims or by non-Christian scholars, but by 32 Christian scholars of the highest eminence backed by 50 different cooperating denominations as an interpolation, as a concoction and as a fabrication, because they have proved that this verse does not exist in the original manuscript. We Muslims must applaud the galaxy of D.D.'s (Doctors of Divinity) who have been honest enough to eliminate another falsehood from the English R.S.V. Bible, thus bringing it closer to the teachings of the Glorious Qur'aan.

A Christian scholar of religion, Heikki Raisanen, has written a book titled 'The Portrait of Jesus (pbuh) in the Qur'aan, (1980, page 127) with the following comments: "*today it is clear to New Testament scholarship that there is hardly anything in the New Testament even remotely like the doctrine of the Trinity. This realization may in itself be a fresh starting point for a dialogue.*" (Referring to dialogue with Muslims)

More proof from the Bible:

1) Jesus (pbuh) never claimed Divinity

Jesus never taught Trinity i.e. 3 in 1. On the contrary he says in:

a. The Gospel of Mark, chap 12, verse 29

"Shama Israelu Adonai Ila Hayno Adonia Ikhad"

It is a Hebrew quotation, which means:

"Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord."

b. The Gospel of John, chap 14, vs. 28

"My father is greater than I."

c. The Gospel of John, chap 10, vs. 29

"My Father... is greater than all."

d. The Gospel of Matt, chap 12, vs. 28

"... I cast out devils by the Spirit of God...."

e. The Gospel of Luke, chap 11, verse 20

"...I with the finger of God cast out devils...."

f. The Gospel of John, chap 5, verse 30

"I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgement is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me."

g. Gospel of Mark 13:32. But of that day and that hour¹⁰⁰ knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.

h. Matt 20:23: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left¹⁰¹, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared of my Father.

100 The same question of the Day of Judgement was posed to the Prophet, and Allah revealed this verse: Chapter 7 v.187: "They ask thee about the Hour, when will it come to pass? Say: The knowledge thereof is with my Lord only. None but He will manifest it at its time..." The Day of Judgement is referred to as the HOUR in many verses. In this verse we see the similarities of the replies given by both Prophet Jesus and Prophet Muhammad (pbuh). This verse proves again that the messages both received was from one source.

101 Compare with the Qur'aanic description of the right and left hands peoples: *Chapter 56 verses 7-12: And you are three sorts. So those on the right-hand; how (happy) are those on the right-hand! And those on the left; how (wretched) are those on the left! And the foremost are the foremost - These are drawn close (to Allah), In Gardens of bliss.*

2) The Catechism of the Church:

a. According to the Catechism of the Christian Church, "The Father is a person, the Son is a person, and the Holy Ghost is a person; but they are not three persons but one person." Person, person, person but not 3 persons but 1 person! *What language is this???* $1 + 1 + 1 = 3$ and can never equal 1.

b. If we have identical triplets and one of them commits murder, should we hang the other two? The answer is 'No', because he is a different person having a different personality.

c. When the Christians speak about the Father in Heaven they have a certain mental picture of an elderly man sitting on one of the planets with the earth as his footstool. When they speak about the son, they have a certain mental picture of a tall handsome man with a beard and long hair. When they speak about the Holy Ghost they have a certain mental picture of a dove that came upon Jesus (pbuh) when he was baptized or like a spirit at the feast of Pentecost. If we ask the Christians "*How many mental pictures do you have when you speak about Trinity?*" they say, "*We have only one picture*". They are deceitful when they say this, for $1 + 1 + 1 = 3$ and not 1.

Proof from the Bible that a human being can never be equal to God

JOB 25:4. How then can man be justified with God? Or how can he be clean that is born of a woman? JOB 25:5. Behold even to the moon, and it shineth not; yea, the stars are not pure in his sight. JOB 25:6. How much less man that is a worm? and the son of man, which is a worm? JOB 14:4. Who can bring a clean thing out of an unclean? Not one.

34. Question: CHRISTIANS SAY THE CONCEPT OF "TRINITY" CAN BE EXPLAINED BY GIVING THE EXAMPLE THAT WATER CAN BE PRESENT IN THREE STATES, I.E. AS SOLID E.G. ICE, AS LIQUID E.G. WATER AND GAS E.G. VAPOUR, YET IT IS ONE AND THE SAME WATER.

Answer: Water can be present in three states- solid, liquid and gas, as ice, water and vapour, but *in all three states the substance remains the same i.e. H₂O* - it contains two atoms of hydrogen and one atom of oxygen. The material and components are the same although the form of the matter differs. Water remains H₂O in the solid form i.e. ice. It remains H₂O in the form of gas i.e. vapour. However in the case of Trinity, besides the form changing, even the components and material change. *The Father is God and Jesus (pbuh) is man and the*

Holy Ghost is a spirit. All three are not made up of the same matter or component so they are three separate entities. Man contains flesh and bones whereas God and spirit do not contain flesh and bones.

Man requires food to eat and live, whereas God does not require food to eat and be alive. No wonder Jesus (pbuh) said at the last supper (in the upper room) in the *Gospel of Luke, chap 24 verses 39 to 43*:

"Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have." And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them his hands and his feet. And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here any meat? And they gave him a piece of broiled fish, and of a honeycomb. And he took it, and did eat before them".

John- 6:42. And they said, is not this Jesus (pbuh), the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? How is it then that he saith, I came down from heaven?

Glorious Qur'aan-Chap. 4. V.171: O People of the Book; exceed not the limits in your religion nor speak anything about Allah, but the truth. The Messiah, Jesus, son of Mary, is only a messenger of Allah and His word which He communicated to Mary and a mercy from Him. So believe in Allah and His messengers. And say not, Three. Desist, it is better for you. Allah is only one God. Far be it from His glory to have a son. To Him belongs whatever is in the heavens and whatever is in the earth. And sufficient is Allah as having charge of affairs.

35. Question: ACCORDING TO CHRISTIANS, JESUS (PBUH) OBVIOUSLY CLAIMED DIVINITY WHEN HE SAID IN THE GOSPEL: "I AND MY FATHER ARE ONE."

Answer: This verse is the most misunderstood verse by the Christians: "I and my Father are one". *John 10 v 30*

Adrian Thatcher writes in his book - '*Truly a Person, Truly God'* (London: SPCK, 1990) P.77. - "There is scarcely a single competent New Testament Scholar who is prepared to defend the view that the four instances of the absolute use of "I am" in John, or indeed most of the other uses, can be historically attributed to Jesus (pbuh)."

The above quotation is sufficient evidence from a Christian viewpoint to disprove John's "I am". *However let us analyse the context to obtain more clarity:* When a Muslim enquires from the Christian Missionaries what is the context? They are tongue-tied. It is unjust and

dishonest on the part of the missionaries to quote out of context. Muslims have every right to ask for the context of the above quotation so as to distinguish the true meaning.

1. To get at the context, we have to begin from chap 10, v, 23, which reads: **"And Jesus (pbuh) walked in the temple in Solomon's porch."** John¹⁰² does not tell us the reason for Jesus (pbuh) tempting the 'devil' by walking alone in the lion's den. We do not expect the Jews to miss a golden opportunity to get even with Jesus (pbuh). Perhaps, he was emboldened by the manner in which he had literally whipped the Jews single-handed in the temple, and upset the tables of the moneychangers at the beginning of his ministry (John 2:15).

"Then came the Jews round about him, and said unto him, how long dost thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Christ, tell us plainly." Chap 10, v, 24

They surrounded him and began accusing and provoking him, saying that he had not put forth his claim plainly and clearly enough, and that he was talking ambiguously. In fact, their real complaint was that they did not like his method of preaching – his invectives, the manner in which he condemned them for their formalism, their ceremonialism, their going for the letter of the law and forgetting the spirit. But Jesus (pbuh) could not afford to provoke them any further – there were too many of them and they were itching for a fight. Discretion is the better part of valour. In a conciliatory spirit befitting the occasion Jesus (pbuh) answered them:

'I told ye, and you believed not: the works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witness of me'. But ye believe not, because ye are not of my sheep, as I said unto you.' *John 10-25*

Jesus (pbuh) refutes the false charge of his enemies that he was ambiguous in his claims. He says that he did tell them clearly enough, yet they would not listen to him, He further justifies by saying: **"My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: and I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man PLUCK THEM OUT OF MY HAND. My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to PLUCK THEM OUT OF MY FATHER'S HAND."** (*John 10-25/26*)

102 Remember that these are all "According to's" gospels so there is no certainty that John ever wrote John, Mark ever wrote Mark, Matthew ever wrote Matthew & so on!

How can anyone be so blind as not to see the exactness of the ending of the last two verses? But spiritual blinkers are more impervious than physical defects. Jesus is telling the Jews and recording for posterity the real relationship between him and the one Who sent him.

Now to the verse-"I and my Father are one." *One in what?* - In their Omniscience? **No! -In their Nature? **No!**- In their Omnipotence? **-No!** Then in what? *The answer is: ONE IN PURPOSE!***

Once a believer has accepted faith, the Messenger and God Almighty sees to it that he remains in faith, This is the purpose of the "Father" AND the "son" AND the "Holy Ghost" AND of every man AND every woman of faith. Let the same John explain his Gnostic mystic verbiage:

"That they all may be one; as thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us..." (John 17:21)

"I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one..." (John 17:23)

If Jesus (pbuh) is "ONE" with God, and if that "ONENESS" makes him God, then *the traitor Judas*, and the doubting Thomas, and the satanic Peter, plus the other nine who deserted him when he was most in need, are also Gods, because the same ONENESS which he claimed with God in John 10:30, he now also claims for all "*who forsook him and fled*" (Mark 14:50) - all "*ye of little faith*" (Matt 8:26) - all "*O faithless and perverse generation*" (Luke 9:41).

We Muslims bewail: where and when will the Christian blasphemy end? The expression "I and my Father are one," was very innocent, meaning nothing more than *a common purpose with God*. Yet regrettably the blinkers remain on for the majority of Christians. *They cannot see, neither can they understand because they have been programmed by the Church to accept blindly and not to think!*

The Jews were looking for trouble and any excuse would do, therefore the Jews took up stones (John 10-31) again to stone him. Jesus (pbuh) answered them:

"Many good works have I shewed you from my Father; for which of those works do ye stone me?" (John 10-32) *The Jews answered him, saying: 'for a good word we stone thee not; but for blasphemy; and because that thou, being a man, makest thyself God.'"*

In verse 24 above the Jews falsely alleged that Jesus (pbuh) was talking ambiguously. When that charge was ably refuted, they then

accused him of blasphemy (kufr), which is treason in the spiritual realm. So now they say that Jesus (pbuh) is claiming to be God when he said- "I and my Father are one". The Christians agree with the Jews in this that Jesus (pbuh) did make such a statement; but differ in that it was not blasphemy because the Christians say that he was God and was entitled to own up to his Divinity. Both groups wanted Jesus (pbuh) dead- Christians for 'redemption' and the Jews for 'blasphemy'. **Ironic!**

But Jesus (pbuh) refuses to co-operate and answers them; **'Is it not written in your law, I SAID, YE ARE GODS? (In Acts 17:29 - Forasmuch then as we are the offspring¹⁰³ of God)**

2. Why "Your Law?"

He is a bit cynical in verse 34, but in any event, why does he say: "Your Law?" Is it not also his law? Did he not say: **"Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill. For verily I say unto you, till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled". (Matt -5:17-18)¹⁰⁴.**

3. "Ye are gods"

He is obviously quoting from the *82nd Psalm (verse 6)* - **"I have said, ye are gods; and all of you are children of the most High."**

If God Almighty called them gods, unto whom the word of God came (meaning that the prophets of God were called 'GODS') the scripture cannot be broken (in other words -YOU CANNOT CONTRADICT ME!)." - Jesus (pbuh) knows his Scripture; and thus speaks with authority; he reasons with his enemies that "if good men, holy men, Prophets of God are being addressed as "GODS" in our Books of Authority with which you find no fault - then why do you take exception to me? - When the only claim I make for myself is far inferior in our language, viz. "a son of God" as against others being called "GODS" by God

103 The word 'offspring' in the literal sense would mean procreated, but this verse is metaphorical just as "Father in heaven", 'son of God', 'children of God' etc is also metaphorical. The Church confuses the people by giving interpretations as it suits them and is misleading the people. Nothing can ever be compared to God! Period!

104 This corresponds with Chap 5, verse 68 of the Glorious Qur'aan which states: - Say: **"O People of the Book! You have no ground to stand upon unless you stand fast by the Law and the Gospel, and all the revelation that has come from your Lord. It is the Revelation that comes to you from your Lord, that increases in most of them their obstinate rebellion and blasphemy. But do not grieve over (these) people without faith!"**

Himself. Even if I (Jesus) described myself as "god" in our language, you should find no fault with me." This is the plain reading of the Christian Scripture, but sadly the Church reads with a jaundiced viewpoint that makes no sense because of financial considerations.

JOHN 8:41 ... "we have one Father, even God" -These are the words of Jesus. -The word "**we**" refers even to him as well as those that were present. **Matt 5: 16 - Jesus (pbuh) said; 'Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven'**.

As can be easily understood, Jesus (pbuh) is speaking *metaphorically* when he says that God is our father as well. In other words it is a sign of respect, just as *Christians call their priest 'father' as a mark of respect. Or is the priest really their father??*

God is the Creator and Sustainer of every thing. He has no equal- no son- no wife and no partner!

*Brian Hebblewaite, a Scholar in Religious studies of Christianity admits in his book, 'The Incarnation'p74, (1987), 'It is no longer possible to defend the divinity of Jesus by reference to the claims of Jesus (pbuh) '.*¹⁰⁵

Jesus (pbuh) states the following in the Bible in: **Matt 20:23 ...but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but it shall be given to them for whom it is prepared of my Father.**

Again this erroneous belief of Jesus (pbuh) having divinity, or oneness with God is disproved.

36. Question: DID JESUS (PBUH) CLAIM DIVINITY AT THE BEGINNING OF GOSPEL OF JOHN?

Answer: Before going in depth into answering this question which is one of the most important for Christianity, let me start by saying that nowhere in the whole Bible, of any Bible, of any language has Jesus (pbuh) himself said: **"Worship me" or "I am God"**. Let us now analyse further:

1. It is mentioned in the Gospel of John, Chap 1 verse 1 - **"In the Beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God"**¹⁰⁶.

¹⁰⁵ Jesus **never claimed divinity**. The Church is misinterpreting the words of Jesus

¹⁰⁶ Read the Glorious Qur'aan about 'words' in chap 18 v 109-

Christian scholars' state that these are the words of a Jew called Philips of Alexandria, who wrote them before Jesus (pbuh) and John (pbut) were born and claimed no divine inspiration for them.

2. Substitute 'word' with 'god'

If we substitute the word, 'Word' with the word 'God' then it will be: "In the Beginning was the *God (word)*, and the *God (word)* was with *God*, and *God (word)* was with *God*." Does this mean that there were two Gods? **THAT IS INCOMPREHENSIBLE.**

3. Hotheos means 'the god'; and Tontheos means 'a god'. The "Original" New Testament is written in Greek. The first time God occurs in the quotation is "Hotheos" which literally means "the God" i.e. "And the Word was with God". But the second time when the word "God" appears in the quotation, the Greek word used is "Tontheos", which means "a god" i.e. "and the word was with god." In Hebrew there is no such thing like Capital 'G' and small 'g' similar to in the English language. Thus Hotheos is 'the God' with capital 'G' and Tontheos is 'a god' with small 'g'.

4. 2 Corinthian chap 4 verse 4

The Biblical Scholars have reversed their system when translating: "**And the devil is the god of this world**". (2 Corinthians 4:4) Here, "Hotheos" has been wrongly (deliberately?) translated as "the god" with a small 'g', instead of "the God" with a capital 'G'.

5. Exodus chap 7 verse 1

"And the Lord said unto Moses, See, I have made thee a god to Pharaoh". (Exodus 7:1) Why is a small 'g' used here for God instead of Capital 'G'? As can be seen the Church and its Scholars are playing around with 'The Word of God'.

"And We have revealed to thee the Book with the truth, verifying that which is before it of the Book and a guardian over it..."
(Glorious Qur'aan-Chap 5:48)

"Then woe to those who write the Book with their own hands and then say-'this is from Allah', to traffic with it for a miserable price! Woe to them for what their hands do write, and the gain they make thereby". (Glorious Qur'aan chapter 2 verse 79)

When one poses this question to a Christian: "Excuse me sir, but can you tell me if Jesus (pbuh) Christ was with God right at the beginning before creation and where in the Bible does it say this."

The reply will usually be, "Yes! Without a doubt", and the following verse would immediately be quoted. "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God." (*John 1, verse 1*). He continues, "You see, our Bible tells us that before any thing was created, Jesus (pbuh) was with God".

When one carefully analysis this verse one will find that this is actually **their interpretation** and not the true meaning of this verse. *They are actually reading into this verse an idea that was created by Philo of Larissa (159 / 158 - 86/ 85 B. C.), a Greek philosopher of Pagan origin, who was the first person to quote this infamous verse, to base their beliefs.* If you analyse the first section of this verse, "*In the beginning was the Word*", then the Christians understand that Jesus (pbuh) is the Word in this part of the verse.

If that is the case then the implication of this will be that Jesus (pbuh) was there in the beginning before God, which means that God was not yet in EXISTENCE and Jesus (pbuh) actually witnessed the creation of God. The reason for this conclusion can be based on the fact that God is actually being mentioned as the SECOND person after Jesus (pbuh) in the structure of creation in this verse, which is not the case and can never be the case. The reason is that a word can only come into existence when spoken by someone, and cannot come into existence on its own accord. So this proves that this is a fabrication by some textual critic.

In all Semitic religions like Judaism and Islam the foundation of belief is that God, Elohim or Allah as He is called, is the creator of all creation, and He alone existed before He created anything. *Christianity is from Judaism.* So how the concept of God in Christianity changed from One to three Gods is a mystery. Even the Old Testament states this unequivocally:

"Thus says the Lord, your Redeemer, who formed you from the womb: I am the Lord, who made all things, who stretched out the heavens alone, who spread out the earth- Who was with me?" (*Isaiah 44 verse 24*) "Turn to Me now and be saved, people all over the world! I Am the only God there is!" (*Isaiah 45 verse 22*)

The third section of John 1, verse 1, is totally bizarre:

"And the Word was God", implying that Jesus (pbuh) is God. Here only a few quotations of the Bible will be used, and besides these there are many to prove the opposite of the conclusion of the third section.

John 5:30, 31- "I can do nothing of my own authority; as I hear, I judge; and my judgment is just, because I seek not my own will but the will of the one who has sent me. If I bear witness to myself my testimony is not true;"

Jesus (pbuh) repeated many times the first commandment (Law):

"Hear O' Israel, your Lord your God is one God" (Mark chap. 12 v. 29) **and "You shall worship your God and none other"**. It is straight to the point. No word about 'god's son' or forgiveness through 'crucifixion' etc as the Church preaches.

"Be still and know that I am God". *Psalms 46:10*

Further it says in the O.T.: **"Thou canst not see My face: for there shall no man see me, and live."** (*Exodus 33, verse 20* This is also proof that Jesus (pbuh) was a mortal and not God; otherwise the people who saw him would have died according to Exodus 33 verse 20.

"Son of man"- Matt 1:21. And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name Jesus: for he shall save his people from their sins. The meaning of this verse is that he will teach his people to follow the guidance he brought from God to be saved from sin. In this quotation it is absolutely clear that **Jesus is the son of Mary¹⁰⁷ and was a human being.** Otherwise it would be absurd to think that God needed a woman to bear Him a son. **Astagfirullah!**

Further proof from the O.T. and N.T. of Jesus (pbuh) being a human:

EXODUS 20:2 I am the LORD thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.

EXODUS 20:3 **Thou shalt have no other gods before me.**

EXODUS 20:4 Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth.

ISAIAH 43-10 Ye are my witnesses, saith the LORD, and my servant whom I have chosen: that ye may know and believe me, and understand that I am he: **before me there was no God formed, neither shall there be after me.** ^{ISAIAH 44-11} **I, even I, am the LORD; and beside me there is no saviour.**

ISAIAH 44-12 I have declared, and have saved, and I have shewed, when there was no strange god among you: therefore ye are my witnesses, saith the LORD, that I am God.

ISAIAH 45-5 I am the LORD, and there is none else, there is no God

107 In the Glorious Qur'aan Jesus is always mentioned as 'son of Mary'

beside me: I girded thee, though thou hast not known me:

ISAIAH 4-56 That they may know from the rising of the sun, and from the west, that there is none beside me. I am the LORD, and there is none else. ISAIAH 4-57 I form the light, and create darkness: I make peace, and create evil: I the LORD do all these things.

ISAIAH 4-58 Drop down, ye heavens, from above, and let the skies pour down righteousness: let the earth open, and let them bring forth salvation, and let righteousness spring up together; I the LORD have created it.

ISAIAH 44-6 ...I am the first, and I am the last; and beside me there is no God. ISAIAH 44-8...Is there a God beside me? Yea, there is no God; I know not any. ISAIAH 44-9- They that make a graven image are all of them vanity... ISAIAH 44-10- Who hath formed a god, or molten a graven image that is profitable for nothing?

GEN 28:14 -God said to Adam-"And thy seed shall be as the dust of the earth"... (We know that Mary (pbuh), the mother of Jesus (pbuh), David, and the whole of humanity is the seed of Adam just as Jesus (pbuh) is. *Is the Church claiming that God is also dust as their doctrine states that Jesus (pbuh) is as the same substance as God? When Jesus (pbuh) was born as a tiny baby he was helpless in his infancy. Could God be born and be helpless as a newborn baby is?*

NEW TESTAMENT:

MATT 4-10 Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. (*this was after Jesus fasted 40 days*)

JOHN 17-3 And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, **and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent.**

JOHN 8-40: But now ye seek to kill me, a **man** that hath told you the truth, which **I have heard of God:**

JOHN 8:41 Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication¹⁰⁸; we have one Father, even God.

JOHN 8:42 Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth¹⁰⁹ and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me. JOHN 8:43 Why do ye not understand my speech? Even because ye cannot hear my word.

¹⁰⁸ The Jews are trying to refute their lineage, but Paul Johnson has this to say about them:

When the Greeks conquered Palestine, the women of the Children of Israel were raped by the Greeks, which caused their offspring to become known as the 'Sons of Darkness'

¹⁰⁹ The words "proceeded forth" are an addition. It was never part of the text

JOHN 8:44 **Ye are of your father the devil**¹¹⁰, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. JOHN 8:45 And because I tell you the truth, ye believe me not.

(verse 42 states clearly that Jesus is a messenger, as all messengers of God were sent to their own people)

*The Glorious Qur'aan has this to say about the 'word' in chap 18 V 109: Say: If the sea were ink for the words of my Lord, the sea would surely be exhausted before the words of my Lord were exhausted, though We brought the like of it to add (thereto)*¹¹¹.

37. Question: WHAT IS THE ISLAMIC PERCEPTION OF GOD OR ALLAH AS THE MUSLIMS CALL HIM?

Answer: "Say: HE is Allah the One and only, ALLAH, who is As-Samad (*the eternally besought of all, One who is totally independent, and on One whom the entire creation depends on*) HE begetteth not, nor is HE begotten, and there is none comparable unto Him¹¹²." (*Chap 112, vv. 1-4.*)

110 These type of expressions are meant metaphorically, just as 'son/s', daughter/s of God are also meant metaphorically.

111 . In these words there is a refutation of the Christian doctrine that "the word was with God", or that "the word was God" (John 1:1). The words of God are so numerous, we are told, that the sea would be exhausted if it were to serve as ink for writing them.

112 The following are just a few powers of Allah stated in the Glorious Qur'aan, which no-one besides Him can do: *Q. Chapter 6. v.96-99: "He is the Cleaver of the daybreak; and He has made the night for rest, and the sun and the moon for reckoning. That is the measuring of the Mighty, the Knowing. And He it is Who has made the stars for you that you might follow the right way thereby in the darkness of the land and the sea. Indeed We have made plain the signs for a people who know. And He it is Who has brought you into being from a single soul, then there is (for you) a resting-place and a repository. Indeed We have made plain the signs for a people who understand. And He it is Who sends down water from the clouds, then We bring forth with it buds of all (plants), then We bring forth from it green (foliage), from which We produce clustered grain; and of the date-palm, of the sheaths of it, come forth clusters (of dates) within reach; and gardens of grapes and the olive and the pomegranate, alike and unlike. Look at the fruit of it when it bears fruit and the ripening of it. Surely there are signs in this for a people who believe!"* Read Qur'aan Chapter 2 v 255 for more of His powers.

“Is not He Who created the heavens and the earth able to create the like of them? Yea! And He is the Creator (of all), the Knower. His command, when He intends anything, is only to say to it, Be, and it is. So glory be to Him in Whose hand is the kingdom of all things! And to Him you will be returned”. (*Chap 36, vv.81-83*)

ALLAH is HE, than whom there is no other god—Who knows (all things) both secret and open; HE, Most GRACIOUS, MOST MERCIFUL. ALLAH is HE, than WHOM there is no other god—the SOVEREIGN, the HOLY ONE, the SOURCE of PEACE (and PERFECTION) the GUARDIAN of FAITH the PRESERVER of SAFETY, the EXALTED in MIGHT, the IRRESISTIBLE. The SUPREME: Glory to ALLAH! (High is HE) above the partners they attribute to HIM. HE is ALLAH, the CREATOR, the EVOLVER, the BESTOWER of FORMS (or colours). To HIM belongs the MOST BEAUTIFUL NAMES: Whatever is in the heavens and on earth, doth declare HIS PRAISES and GLORY: and HE is the EXALTED in MIGHT the wise”. *Glorious Qur’aan: Chap 59:vs.22-24. (Read also: Chap 2 verse 255 & Chap 24 verse 35.)*

38. Question: WHAT ARE THE ISLAMIC CRITERIA TO ENTER PARADISE?

Answer: “By time, Verily man is at a loss, except such as have faith (to believe in the Qur’aan) and do righteous deeds, and (join together) in mutual enjoining of Truth, and of patience and constancy.” *Glorious Qur’aan Chap 103, v. 1-4*

The Qur’aan states four criteria to enter paradise-

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1 st : To believe in ONE GOD | 2 nd : To Do righteous deeds |
| 3 rd : Exhort towards the truth | 4 th : Exhort towards patience |

Also in chap 18.v. 110: “Say to mankind: I am only a mortal like you – it is revealed to me that your God is one God. So whoever hopes to meet his Lord, he should do good deeds, and join no one in the service of his Lord”

Jesus (pbuh) himself also said the same thing in the Bible:

Matt 5:17 Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil.

Matt 5:18 For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.

39. Question: IS IT NOT MENTIONED IN THE BIBLE THAT JESUS (PBUH) IS THE "BEGOTTEN SON" OF GOD THUS MAKING HIM GOD?

Answer:

1. In the Bible¹¹³, God has thousands of sons. It is mentioned in:

a. Luke: 3 v. 38: "...Adam, which was the son of God."

b. Genesis, 6 v. 2: "That the sons of God saw the daughters of men, that they were fair...."

c. Exodus, 4 v. 22: "...Israel is my son, even my firstborn." "...For I (God) am a Father to Israel, and Ephraim is my firstborn."

d. Psalms, 2 v. 7: "...the LORD hath said unto me, (David) 'Thou art my son; this day have I begotten thee.'"

e. Romans, 8 v. 14: "For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God."

f. Matt 5 v.9- "Blessed are the peacemakers for they shall be called the sons of God".

g. Jeremiah 31 v.9- Ephraim is my first-born.

h. In Acts 17 v. 29- "For as much then as we are the offspring of God". Here all of humankind is referred to as 'offspring', metaphorically.

The Christians agree with the reasoning but say that "but Jesus (pbuh) was not like that". God made Adam, and God made every living thing, but 'Jesus was the begotten son of God, begotten not made'. And the Christians quote from the Gospel of John, Chap 3 verse 16: "For God so loved the world that he gave his only begotten son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life."

2. Meaning of the word 'begotten'

When asked the meaning of the word 'begotten' the Christian will rarely be able to explain. **Begetting is an animal act belonging to the animal function of sex.** 'Begotten' means to beget i.e. to procreate. How dare the Church attribute such a lowly function to God?

¹¹³ According to the Bible every righteous person who follows the Commandments of God is referred to as 'son of God'. And the Bible says that the Jews were 'Gods'. The Church (Pope) cannot make exceptions and additions if they believe it to be the word of God.

3. The word 'begotten' is an interpolation:

The word 'begotten' mentioned in the Gospel of John, Chap 3 vs. 16 has been thrown out from the Revised Standard Version of the Bible as an interpolation, as a fabrication. The Revised Standard Version has been revised by 32 Christian Scholars of the highest eminence, backed by 50 different co-operating denominations and these Scholars have removed this blasphemous word without any ceremony as an interpolation, concoction, fabrication, and adulteration. Yet the majority of Christians are unaware of this important fact because they do not read their own Bibles. The priests in their sermons continue to use this blasphemous verse and indoctrinate the masses with false teachings.

4. The Qur'aan states unequivocally that Allah does not beget in Surah Maryam, Chap19 vs., 88 to 92:

"They say: '(Allah) Most Gracious has begotten a son! Indeed ye have put forth a thing most monstrous! Whereof the skies are ready to burst, the earth to split asunder, and the mountains to fall down in utter ruin; that they should invoke a son for (Allah) Most Gracious-for it is not consonant with the Majesty of (Allah) Most Gracious that He should beget a son.'(Al-Qur'aan 19:88-92)

b. "Say: 'He is Allah, the One and Only; Allah, the Eternal, Absolute; He begetteth not, nor is He begotten; and there is none like unto Him!" (Al-Qur'aan 112:1-4)

c. "It is not befitting for Almighty God that He should beget a son. Glory be to him! When He determines a matter, He only says, "Be" and it is! (Glorious Qur'aan 19:35)

d. "But His command, when He intends a thing, is only that He says unto it: "BE" and it is". (Glorious Qur'aan 36:82)

e. "To Him is due the primal origin of the heavens and the earth; when He decreed a matter He saith to it "Be" and it is". (Glorious Qur'aan 2:117)

Imam Ghazzali explains beautifully the concept of God in his book, "The Revival of the Religious Sciences" Vol 1-page 130: "God has got no length and breath as these are attributes of a body which is an originated thing. Its Creator existed from before it. So how would He enter in a body, as He existed by Himself before all originated things and there was nobody along with Him? He is an All Knowing, Almighty, Willing Creator. These attributes are impossible for a body. He exists by Himself without the substances

of a body. He is not like any worldly thing, rather He is ever living, ever lasting, and nothing is like Him. Where is the similarity of the Creator with the created, the Fashioner with the fashioned? Hence it is impossible that anything can ever resemble Him!"

The Bible has dozens of verses that contradict the Church's false teachings. A few examples are given here:

Deut 4:39: "... that the Lord, He is God in heaven above, and upon the earth beneath; **there is none else**";

Deut 6:4: The first commandment "**Hear, O' Israel: The Lord our God is One Lord**";

Isaiah 43:10-11: "... that ye may know and believe Me, and understand that I am He; **before Me there was no God formed, neither shall there be after Me. I, even I, am the Lord; and beside Me there is no saviour**";

Isaiah 44:6: "Thus saith the Lord... I am the first, and I am the last; and beside Me there is no God";

Isaiah 45:18: "For thus saith the Lord that created the heavens; God himself formed the earth and made it; He hath established it, He created it not in vain, He formed it to be inhabited. I am the Lord; **and there is none else.**"

From Isaiah 45:18 alone we can conclusively say that God alone was the Creator and no one else, not even Jesus (pbuh), participated in the creation.

See also: Deuteronomy 4:35; Exodus 8:10; 11 Samuel 7:22; 1 Kings 8:23; 1 Chronicles 17:20; Psalms 86:8, 89:6 and 113:5; Hosea 13:4; Zechariah 14:9& Psalms 46:10

New Testament - Mark 12:29 - And Jesus answered him, "The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O! Israel: The Lord our God is one Lord."

I Corinthians 8:4: "'... we know that an idol¹¹⁴ is nothing in the world, and that **there is none other God but One.**" **I Timothy 2:5:** "**For there is ONE GOD,** and one **mediator** between God and men, **the man Christ Jesus.**"

114 Christian churches, and especially the Vatican are full of idols -statues

John 14:15 & 16: "If ye love me (Jesus), keep my commandments. And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter¹¹⁵, that he may abide with you for ever";

Look to the expression 'the man Christ Jesus' in 1 Cor. Every Prophet during his time has been a mediator for his followers before God, as can be compared with the following verses from the Glorious Qur'aan about the Holy Prophet Muhammed (pbuh): Qur'aan.3:31-32: "Say: If you love Allah, follow me (Muhammed): Allah will love you, and grant you protection from your sins. And Allah is Forgiving, Merciful. Say: Obey Allah and the Messenger; but if they turn back, Allah surely loves not the disbelievers".

What this means in reality is that by obeying and following the messenger of Allah (God), which was sent to us in our times we are in truth following the commands of our Creator; as He sent the messengers for our guidance. As no other messenger will be sent to this world, (*the messengership has drawn to a close*) the entire humankind has to follow only Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) for our success in this world and the hereafter. The decision is on each individual to use the free will given to us, to reject or accept Islam.

6. Can the learned Christians scholars explain the following verses in the light of their insistence on claiming Jesus is a 'real son of god'?

- a) **Exodus 4:22-...Israel is my first-born**
- b) **Jeremiah 31:9- ...Ephraim is my first-born**
- c) **Matt 23:33- ...Jesus called the Jews "ye snakes"**
- d) **John 8:44- ...ye are of your father the devil**
- e) **John 12:36-... sons of the light**
- f) **Psalms 2:7- ... Thou art my son, this day have I begotten¹¹⁶ thee**

The answer is in: Jeremiah 25:6... "Have we not all one Father? Hath not God created us?"

The Catholics inform us: "Arius denied that God could have a son, and so he maintained that Jesus Christ, although a great prophet, could not have been truly God; he is not equal in substance or in dignity to the Father, since he had a beginning or origin, while the Father alone was without beginning."¹¹⁷

115 The Comforter that Jesus mentions is Muhammed (pbuh) as the message of the Qur'aan is for all time. **No new comforter and new message has come from the time of Jesus, (over 2,000 years) EXCEPT MUHAMMED AND THE GLORIOUS QUR'AAN!**

116 David is also referred in the Bible as 'begotten'.

117 Virtue's Catholic Encyclopedia. 1965 volume 1, p. 45

"Allah will never forgive the sin of ascribing partners to Him. He forgives (*all other sins*) except that to whom He will. Whoever ascribes partners to Allah has indeed invented a tremendous sin" *Al-Qur'aan. Chap 4, v. 48.*

MARK 7:7- Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

MATT 15:9- But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. **MATT 7:21-** Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. **MATT 7:22-** Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name¹¹⁸ have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? **MATT 7:23-** And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. **MATT 5:17** -Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. **MATT 22, v 36;**

Jesus was asked- "**Master, which is the great commandment in the Law?**" **MATT 22, v 37:** Jesus said: "Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind."

40. Question: DID JESUS CLAIM DIVINITY IN JOHN 14:6

Answer: 1. Gospel of John Chap 14 verses 1 – 6

Jesus saith unto him: "I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me".

In order to understand the verse better we should **read the context** - i.e. *from the Gospel of John chap 14 verse 1 to 6:*

"Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. In my Father's¹¹⁹ house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.'

118 It is quite clear that whoever takes the name of Jesus to do miracles will be shunned by him. *Why?* Because Jesus always took **God's name to do miracles** and those who claim to do miracles in Jesus's name are blaspheming against God, so he will chase them away from him. **Take note all you 'missionaries and miracle workers'!**

119 Note that Jesus says 'in my Father's house', not in 'my house'

(Thomas) 'Lord, we know not whither thou goest; and how can we know the way?' Jesus saith unto him, **'I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the father, but by me.'**" (John 14:1-6)

2. Every prophet in his time is the way to God

Jesus being a prophet rightly said that he was the way to God during his time. During the time of Moses, Moses was the way, the truth and life and no man could come to God but through Moses (pbut).

Today the last and final messenger of God is Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) who is the way, the truth and the life; no man comes unto God but through his teachings. There are many verses in the Glorious Qur'aan stating this about the Holy Prophet.

Examples:

Qur'aan. 48:10: "Those who swear allegiance to thee (Muhammed) do but swear allegiance to Allah. The hand of Allah is above their hands". Qur'aan. 21:107 "And We have not sent thee but as a mercy to the all the nations...¹²⁰"

Refer also the following chaps and verses in the Glorious Qur'aan:

Chap 48:18	Chap 9 :61	Chap:36 v. 6
Chap 2 :104	Chap 3 : 164	Chap 28 :46-47
Chap_4:_170 ;	Chap 3:31	Chap 33 :45-48

3. Knowing God is seeing God

"If ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also: and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him." (John 14:7)

Let us analyse the above statement of Jesus (pbuh):

He said '*if you had known me*'. The answer is off course the disciples saw him, and knew him. They knew his family, where he lived, what he used to eat, etc.

But that is not what Jesus (pbuh) is referring to here. He is telling them that: What is wrong with you people? Do you still have doubts about me? Did I not tell you that I am **"one sent by God"**? Are you all so blind? Did you not see that when **I prayed to God in your**

120 Geneses 17:4: "As for me, behold, my covenant is with thee, and thou shalt be a father of many nations" (referring to Abraham). Prophet Muhammed has stated that he is the answer to Father Abraham's prayer of a Prophet that will be sent to the whole of humankind. So here is another prophecy fulfilled about the coming of this world Prophet. **Only Prophet Muhammed has claimed to be a world Prophet!**

presence, that what I beseeched God for was granted right before the people's eyes? I cured the blind and the lepers, fed so many thousands with a couple of fish and a few loaves of bread etc all **with God's permission**. Do you people still not believe what I say to you? **"O ye of little faith! O perverse generation! O ye snakes and vipers! How much longer must I stay amongst you?"**

Jesus (pbuh) was fed up with them. He is telling them that after they saw with their own eyes all these miracles are they yet blind that they do not believe what he tells them? Could they not see that it was GOD who was doing these things through him? The miracles and works of the prophet bear testimony to the existence of God, and yet they 'could not see'. In other words they still did not believe him to be a messenger¹²¹ sent by God. That is what is meant by John 14:7.

The Glorious Qur'aan bears testimony to the curses pronounced by Jesus (pbuh) and David (pbuh) in *Chap 5 v 78*:

"Those who disbelieved from among the Children of Israel were cursed by the tongue of David and Jesus, the son of Mary ..."

Note: It is very important to understand that the words spoken by Jesus (pbuh) himself take superiority over all of his disciples or the Church's (and Pope's) word. *Jesus (pbuh) himself has stated this in Matt 10:24- 'The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord'.*

All the disciples' statements in the Bible, irrespective of who they are that contradict Jesus's words have to be rejected, as *revelation was vouchsafed to Jesus alone* and not to anyone else. Jesus calls himself "son of man" more than EIGHTY TIMES in the Bible. Moreover, Jesus prayed to God is stated many times in the Bible. If he was God, as some Christians claim, then we Muslims ask: **Can God pray to God?** Those who claim to love Jesus should read the Bible with true understanding, and not be taken in by the preachers who give *their own meanings and opinions to the verses of the Bible in their sermons*.

The words "son of God" is mentioned a few times in the Bible, and they are spoken by others and not by Jesus (pbuh). *Examples:*

Mark- 15:39: And when the centurion, which stood over against him, saw that he so cried out, and gave up the ghost, he said, truly this

121 Luke 24:19. And he said unto them, what things? And they said unto him, concerning **Jesus of Nazareth, which was a prophet** mighty in deed and word before God and all the people:

man was the son of God. *Luke- 4:41*: And devils also came out of many, crying out, and saying, thou art Christ the son of God. And he rebuking them suffered them not to speak: for they knew that he was Christ¹²². *Luke- 22:70*: Then said they all, Art thou then the son of God? And he said unto them, “Ye say that I am”.

In *John 1:20* Jesus refutes *Luke 4:41* by stating unequivocally that he was NOT THE CHRIST. “And he (Jesus) confessed, and denied not, I am not the Christ”.

Let us analyse the above three verses.

1) In Mark 15-39, the centurion who was a pagan, makes this observation. We know that the Romans worshipped many gods, so it is no surprise to hear him say that Jesus was a ‘son of God’. One more made no difference to him.

2) The devils called him son of God. Immediately Jesus rebuked them for saying so. If it were true he would not have rebuked them.

3) “They” said he was a “son of God”. Jesus replied: “Ye say that I am”. If it was true then Jesus should have admitted this himself and not ‘thrown it back’ at them.

Nowhere does Jesus admit or agree with this false belief of the Church. Unless off course the Church believes the words of Devils, and a pagan centurion, and “they” to justify their doctrine! Jesus did foretell:

“But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.” *Mark 15:9*

Examples of the Gods & sons of God of the following nations that had influence on Christianity:

GREEKS: Apollo & Dionysius	Sons of Zeus by mortal mothers.
ROMANS: Hercules	EGYPTIANS: Osiris, Isis, Horus
SYRIANS: Adonis & Attis PERSIANS: Mithra	BABYLONIANS: Baal, Astarte

Will Durant observes: *“Christianity did not destroy paganism; it adopted it... from Egypt came the ideas of a divine trinity.”*

122 ‘for they knew that he was Christ’: These words are added on and does not form part of the original text, because Jesus refutes these words in *:JN 1:20 And he (Jesus) confessed, and denied not; but confessed, I am not the Christ*. There is double emphasis here: One is ‘he confesses’ and the second is that ‘he denied not’

Arthur Findley writes in his book "Rock of Truth" - *"It was not until the year 527 C.E. that it was decided when Jesus was born, and various monks equipped with astrological learning were called in to decide this important point. Ultimately, the Emperor decided that the 25th of December, the date of birth for the pagan Roman god, Mithra, be accepted as the date of birth for Jesus."*

"In respect both of doctrines and rites, the cult of Mithra appears to have presented many points of resemblance to Christianity. Taken all together, the coincidences of the Christian with the heathen festivals are too close and too numerous to be accidental. They mark the compromise which the Church in its "hour of triumph" was compelled to make with its vanquished and yet still dangerous rivals."

"The Golden Bough" by: Sir James G. Frazer.

The famous Western writer, Edward Gibbon writes in his book, *"The Decline and fall of the Roman Empire"* - "Christmas is the feast of the birth of Christ, celebrated on December 25th. Despite the beliefs about Christ that the birth stories expressed, the Church did not observe a festival for the celebration of the event until the 4th century. Up to this time Rome had celebrated the feats of the "Invisible Sun" on December 25th, and even from 274 C.E. under the emperor Aurelian the feast was still celebrated."

In Jeremiah 10:2-5: It is forbidden to decorate 'Christmas trees'

"Thus saith the Lord, learn not the way of the heathen, and be not dismayed at the signs of heaven; for the heathen are dismayed at them. For the customs of the people are vain: for one cutteth a tree out of the forest, the work of the hands of the workman, with the axe. They deck it with silver and with gold; they fasten it with nails and with hammers that it moves not. They are upright as the palm tree, but speak not; they must be borne, because they cannot go. Be not afraid of them; for they cannot do evil, neither also is it in them to do good."

Christians have been doing this for centuries and the Church and Priests have not spoken out or stopped this evil, which is clearly forbidden in the teachings of the Bible.

Immoral textual critics have made up all the doctrines of modern Christianity: the Trinity, Divine Sonship of Jesus, Divinity of Jesus Christ, Original Sin and Atonement. From Jesus's own sayings, which

are recorded in the New Testament, it is perfectly clear that he never claimed divinity:

"I can do nothing of my own self" John 8:28; "My Father is greater than I" John 14:28; "The Lord our God is One Lord" Mark 12:29; "My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?" Mark 15:34 "Father, into Thy hands I commend my spirit." Luke 23:46.

Mark 13:32 "But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the son, but the Father."

Psalm 121:4: "Behold, He that keepeth Israel shall neither slumber nor sleep."

Qur'aan: 2:v255. "Neither slumber nor sleep overtaketh Him."

**Luke 5:16 "And he withdrew himself into the wilderness, and prayed."
Luke 4:1-13 "Satan tempted Jesus for forty days" but in James 1:13 is said: "... for God cannot be tempted with evil..." (If satan tried to tempt Jesus then how can Jesus be God?) John 17: 3. **And this is life eternal, that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent. John 1.v 18- No man hath seen God at any time,... Matthew 19:17-And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is, God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments. Matthew 21:11- And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.****

41. Question: DOES ISLAM BELIEVE IN SEVERAL GODS BECAUSE THE QUR'AAN USES THE WORD 'WE' WHEN GOD SPEAKS IN THE QUR'AAN?

Answer: Islam is strictly a monotheistic religion. It believes in and adheres to uncompromising monotheism. It believes that God is One and unique in His attributes. In the Qur'aan, God often refers to Himself as 'We', but this does not mean that Islam believes in the existence of more than one God. In the Arabic language as well as in eastern languages, there are 2 types of plural: one is a *plural of numbers* and the other is a *plural of respect*. When Allah refers to Himself in the Qur'aan, He often uses the Arabic word 'Nahnu' meaning 'We'. It does not indicate plural of numbers but plural of respect. Tawheed (monotheism) is one of the pillars of Islam. The existence and uniqueness of one and only one God is mentioned hundreds of times in the Glorious Qur'aan. The foundation of belief in Islam is: There is only ONE GOD!

"Say He is Allah the One and only." Al-Qur'aan 112: 1.

Say: It is (only) revealed to me that your God is one God: will you then submit? Al-Qur'aan 21:108.

42. Question: THE QUR'AAN SAYS THAT ALLAH HAS PUT 'A SEAL ON THE HEARTS OF THE KUFFAR' AND THEY WILL NOT BELIEVE. SCIENCE TELLS US TODAY THAT THE BRAIN IS RESPONSIBLE FOR UNDERSTANDING AND BELIEVING AND NOT THE HEART. ISN'T THE QUR'AAN CONTRADICTING SCIENCE?

Answer:

1. The Glorious Qur'aan says: "As to those who reject Faith it is the same to them; whether thou warn them or do not warn them; they will not believe. Allah hath set a seal on their hearts and on their hearing and on their eyes is a veil -Great is the penalty they incur." (Al-Qur'aan 2:6-7)

2. *The word 'qalb' in Arabic means heart as well as intelligence:*

Thus the above verses also mean that Allah has put a seal on the intelligence of the kuffars (unbelievers) as they will not understand and believe.

3. *In the English language heart is the centre of love and emotion* and it also means an organ in the body which pumps blood. The same word heart is used for the centre of thought, love and emotion. Today we know that brain is the centre of thought, love and emotion. Yet while expressing emotions a person is likely to say "I love you from the bottom of my heart". Imagine a scientist telling his wife, "I love you from the bottom of my heart" and the wife replies, "Don't you even know the basics of science, that the brain is responsible for the emotions and not the heart? In fact you should say I love you from the bottom of my brain."

4. *Arabs know that the word heart in Arabic is also used for centre of thought and understanding* so no Arab will ever ask as to why Allah has sealed the hearts of the kaffir, as he knows that in this context it refers to the centre of thought and understanding.

5. The word 'heart' in the sense of feeling is also mentioned in the Bible by no other than Jesus (pbuh) in: **Matt 9:4- And Jesus knowing their thoughts said, wherefore think ye evil in your hearts?**

43. Question: THE QUR'AAN MENTIONS IN SEVERAL PLACES THAT THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH WERE CREATED IN 6 DAYS. BUT IN SURAH FUSSILAT, IF ONE ADDS UP THE

NUMBER OF DAYS THEN IT COMES TO 8 DAYS. ISN'T THIS A CONTRADICTION?

Answer: 1.Heavens and the Earth created in Six days. The Qur'aan says that the heavens and the earth were created in 6 *Ay'yaams* i.e. 6 epochs and it is mentioned in the following verses:

Surah Al A'raf chap 7 vs. 54

Surah Hadid chap 57 vs.4

Surah Yunus chap 10 vs. 3.

Surah Qaf chap 50 vs. 38

Surah Al Furqan chap 25 vs. 59

Surah Hud chap 11 vs. 7

Surah Al Sajdah, chap 32 vs.4

The verses of the Qur'aan that you are referring to are in Surah Fussilat chap 41 verses 9 to 12.

"Say: Is it that ye deny Him Who created the earth in two days? And do ye join equals with him? He is the Lord of (all) the Worlds; He set on the (earth) mountains standing firm high above it, and bestowed blessings on the earth, and measured therein all things to give them nourishment in due proportion in four days, in accordance with (the needs of) those who seek (sustenance). Moreover, He comprehended in His design the sky, and it had been (as) smoke. He said to it and to the earth- Come ye together, willingly or unwillingly. They said: we do come (together) in willing obedience. So He completed them as seven firmaments in two days and He assigned to each heaven its duty and command and We adorned the lower heaven with lights, and (provided it) with guard. Such is the decree of (Allah) the Exalted in might, full of knowledge." (*Al-Qur'aan 41:9-12*)

It seems that these verses of the Qur'aan give the initial impression that the heavens and the earth were created in 8 days. *As mentioned at the beginning of this book, there are many translations that are incorrect; however the ORIGINAL ARABIC QUR'AAN IS AVAILBLE to refer to and correct these mistakes of the translations.*

2. 'Summa' means moreover or simultaneously.

If you analyse these verses carefully, it speaks about 2 different creations: the earth and the heaven. The earth excluding the mountains was created in 2 days and the mountains were set on the earth standing firm and blessed and measured its sustenance in 4 days. Therefore the earth along with the mountains was created in 6 days according to verse 9 and 10.

Verses 11 and 12 states - moreover that the heavens were created in 2 days. The Arabic word used in the beginning of verse 11 of Surah

Fussilat is '*summa*' which means; 'then' or 'moreover'. There are certain Qur'aanic translations, which have used 'then' for the word *summa*, which indicates 'afterwards'. If the word '*summa*' is wrongly translated then the total of the creation of heaven and earth will be 8 days, which will conflict with other verses of the Qur'aan that states that the heavens and earth were created in 6 days. It will also conflict with the Surah Ambiya chap 21, verse 30, which says that the heavens and the earth were created simultaneously.

Therefore the correct translation of the word '*summa*' in this verse would be 'moreover'. Abdullah Yusuf Ali has rightly translated the word '*summa*' as moreover which clearly gives an indication that the earth along with the mountains, a heaven etc. was created in 6 days. Therefore the total does not come to 8 days but 6 days.

Example: If a builder constructed a 10 storey building and the surrounding compound wall in 6 months; and after completion of his project he gives a more detailed account explaining that the basement of the building was built in 2 months, and the 10 storeys took 4 months, and *simultaneously*, while the basement and the building was being constructed, he also constructed the surrounding of the building along with the compound wall which took 2 months. Therefore both his first and second descriptions are not contradicting, but the second statement gives a more detailed account for the construction. Therefore, the time factor in the completion of the project is six months and not eight months.

3. Heavens and the Earth created simultaneously

The Qur'aan describes the creation of the universe in many verses-sometimes it says the heavens and the earth (7:54, 10:3, 11:7, 25:59, 32:4, 50:38, 57:4) while in other places it says earth and the heaven (49:9-12, 2:29, 20:4) thus further supplementing the verse of Surah Ambiya chap 21 verse 30 which speaks about the Big-Bang and that the heavens and the earth were created simultaneously.

Similarly in Surah Al-Baqara chap 2 verse 29:

"It is He Who hath created for you all things that are on earth; Then He turned to the heaven and made them into seven firmaments. And of all things He hath perfect knowledge-It is He who has created for you all things on the earth (summa) simultaneously made the heaven into seven firmaments."

Therefore the correct translation of the word *summa* is 'moreover' or 'simultaneously'.

44. Question: AT ONE PLACE THE QUR'AAN MENTIONS THAT MAN IS CREATED FROM SPERM AND IN ANOTHER PLACE IT MENTIONS THAT MAN IS CREATED FROM DUST. ARE THESE TWO VERSES NOT CONTRADICTORY? CAN YOU PROVE THESE STATEMENTS SCIENTIFICALLY?

Answer: The Qur'aan refers to the lowly beginnings of a human being from a drop of sperm in several verses, including the following verse from Surah Qiyamah: **"Was he not a drop of sperm emitted (in lowly form)?"** (Al-Qur'aan 75:37)

The Qur'aan also mentions in several verses that human beings are created from dust.

"Consider) that We created you out of dust." (Al-Qur'aan 22:5)

Scientists have proven that all the elements present in the human body (i.e. the constituent elements of the human body) are all present in the earth. This is the scientific explanation for the Qur'aanic verse that says that man was created from dust.

In other verses the Qur'aan says that man was created from sperm. However this is not a contradiction. Contradiction means statements that are opposite or conflicting and both cannot be true simultaneously. All the statements in the Qur'aan regarding to the creation of a human being are correct.

2. Man created from water:

In certain verses the Qur'aan says that man was created from water.

"It is He Who has created man from water." (Al-Qur'aan 25:54)

Science has proved all the three statements to be correct. Man has been created from sperm, dust as well as water.

3. It is not a Contradiction but a Contradistinction

Suppose I say that in order to make a cup of tea one needs water. One also needs tealeaves. The two statements are not contradictory since both water and tealeaves are required in order to make a cup of tea¹²³. Furthermore if I want sweet tea I can even add sugar.

Thus there is no contradiction in the Qur'aan when it says that man is created from sperm, dust and water. It is a contradistinction.

Contradistinction means speaking about two different concepts on the same subject without conflict.

123 2nd example: If I say that a building is made from brick, it does it mean that I am excluding sand, cement and water, as these are also part of the process of building.

Example of contradiction: If I say that a man is always truthful and a habitual liar, that is a contradiction, but if I say that a man is always honest, kind and loving, then it is a contradistinction.

45. Question: IS ALLAH FORGIVING OR REVENGEFUL?

Answer: 1. Allah is Most Merciful: *The Qur'aan says hundreds of times that Allah is the Most Merciful.* 113 of the 114 Surahs i.e. chaps of the Glorious Qur'aan, except for Surah Taubah chap 9 ¹²⁴, begin with the beautiful formula- **Bismillah-hir-Rahman-nir-Rahim-** which means, *"In the name of Allah, Most Gracious, Most Merciful."*

2. Allah is Forgiving: The Glorious Qur'aan mentions in hundreds of verses, including Surah Nisa, chap 4 verse 110 and Surah Maidah, chap 5 verse 74: **"And Allah is Oft-Forgiving, Most Merciful."** One of the attributes of Allah stated in the Glorious Qur'aan is **AL GHAF'FAR, which means Exceedingly Forgiving.** The Divine attributes **Ghafir** and **Ghafur** are explained as meaning **One Who protects men from the commission of sins and faults and One Who passes over their sins and faults.** Allah loves to forgive His servants when they ask for forgiveness, as this is one of His qualities.

3. Besides being Merciful and Forgiving, Allah is also strict in giving punishment to the deserving. The Qur'aan also mentions that Allah will inflict severe punishment to the unbelievers and rejecters of faith, and to all those who disobey Him. However, what is noteworthy is that the mention of Allah's forgiveness is constantly mentioned when punishment is spoken of, to show that the attribute of mercy is the predominant attribute of the Divine nature.

4. "...And in the hereafter is a severe chastisement, and (also) forgiveness from Allah and (His) pleasure. And this world's life is naught but a source of vanity". (*Al-Qur'aan Chap 57 v 20*)

5. "He who created Death and Life that He may try which of you is best in deed; and He is the Exalted in Might, Oft-Forgiving".
(*Al-Qur'aan 67:2*)

"Say: 'O My servants who have transgressed against their souls! Despair not of the Mercy of Allah: for Allah forgives all sins for He is Oft-Forgiving, Most Merciful. Turn you (all) to your Lord in repentance and bow to His will, before the penalty comes on you!"
(*Glorious Qur'aan Ch 39:vs. 53-54*)

124 This chapter begins with a warning from Allah to the kuffar to put things right and to adhere to the treaty that they signed with the Muslims as they had broken the treaty unilaterally.

“And He it is Who accepts repentance from His servants and pardons evil deeds, and He knows what you do; And He answers those who believe and do good deeds, and gives them more out of His grace. And for the disbelievers is a severe chastisement”.
(Glorious Qur’aan Ch 42:vs. 25-26)

“And those who, having done something to be ashamed of, or wronged their souls, earnestly bring Allah to mind, and ask for forgiveness for their sins- and who can forgive sins except Allah? - And are never obstinate in persisting knowingly in (the wrong) they have done. For such the reward is forgiveness from their Lord, and gardens with rivers flowing underneath, - an eternal dwelling: How excellent a recompense for those who work (and strive)!

(Glorious Qur’aan Chap 3, vs. 135-136)

“But those who do wrong but repent thereafter and (truly) believe, - verily Thy Rabb is thereafter oft Forgiving, Most Merciful”.

(Glorious Qur’aan chap 7 verse 153)

There are four criteria for repentance: 1st. accept that the act is wrong. 2nd, discontinue it immediately. 3rd, never do it again in future. And lastly, compensate the person for the loss.

Taking the above into account of Allah’s Mercy, Forgiveness and Justice, one may well ask: According to the Church’s teachings, God is unjust; because He required ‘his innocent son’ to be crucified¹²⁵ and killed, and thus becomes accursed. He is such a cruel God that He has to exact his pound of flesh before forgiving. Secondly, this God of the Church is so unforgiving that the sin of Adam is passed onto every human being that He will create centuries later, although we are all innocent of the sin of Adam. This God of the Church is ruthless and unforgiving. He cannot forgive without crucifying an innocent person, and condemning every innocent child yet to be born with the stigma of a sin. Does it make sense? We Muslims will never worship such a merciless God!

The truth of the matter is that it is the concocted teachings of Paul that the Church is foisting on the people. The Qur’aan gives a clear warning to the Jews and the Christians in Chap 2 v 79:

“Then woe to those who write the Book with their own hands and then say-‘this is from Allah’, to traffic with it for a miserable price!

125 DEUT 21:23 His body shall not remain all night upon the tree, but thou shalt in any wise bury him that day; for he that is hanged is accursed of God

Woe to them for what their hands do write, and the gain they make thereby”.

Jesus (pbuh) also warned about the wrong teachings that will be taught in the future in: *Mark 15:9* - **“But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commands of men”.**

46. Question: WHY WAS IT NECESSARY FOR GOD TO SEND SO MANY PROPHETS TO THIS WORLD? AND WHY IS THE NAME ISLAM CHOSEN?

Answer: The introduction of innovations and deviations by its adherents was the prime reason for the sending of the Prophets so that the belief in One God had to be re-instated to its original purity. And on the Day of Judgement mankind will have no excuse against Allah that the message was not delivered to them. For this reason Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) was sent after Jesus (pbuh) to once again establish the worship of One God. God revealed to him **the Qur’aan that contains eternal principals for man’s individual and collective life on earth.** By Divine decree, the Qur’aan is above all previous scripture that was previously revealed, and *the Qur’aan is preserved absolutely and permanently in the original language that it was revealed in- Arabic.* The Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) is the last and final messenger sent to this earth. No new messenger from Allah will come after him with any new scripture, as it is not necessary, since the Qur’aan to humankind remains intact to the end of time. **It can never be interpolated and corrupted!** The Glorious Qur’aan confirms all the previous prophets that were sent for the guidance of mankind, and stresses that the message on the unity of God is the foundation of belief. *Glorious Qur’aan: Chap 5: v. 48-*

And We have revealed to thee the Book with the truth, verifying that which is before it of the Book and a guardian over it...”

In Jeremiah 28:9: “The prophet which prophesied of peace, when the word of the prophet shall come to pass, then shall the prophet be known, that the Lord hath truly sent him.”

The word Islam means submission to Allah and also signifies tranquility and peace. Peace between the Creator and his creatures. This prophecy of Jeremiah cannot be applied to Jesus (pbuh), as he stated that he did not come for peace. This prophecy is meant exclusively for Prophet Muhammed (pbuh), as the religion he was given is Islam, which means peace. At the Sermon on the Mount, Jesus (pbuh) foretold about the followers of Islam as recorded in *Matt Chap*

5, v,9: "Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God."

Matt chap. 21, v43- Jesus forewarned the Jews: "Therefore I tell you, the kingdom of God will be taken away from you and given to a nation producing the fruits of it."

The kingdom of God has been given to the Muslims as we have preserved the true teachings of all the prophets as is recorded in the Glorious Qur'aan, and are openly propagating it!

The meaning of the word Islam has a wide meaning. In a nutshell it means: (a) Surrender one's will to the will of Allah, (b) Submit to the creed of Islam, meaning to the Shahadah, (c) Obey Allah with complete sincerity even if it is against our own desires, (d) and this brings one to the real inner peace that is Islam.

What the critics have to say about Islam

"The Christians have not been given orders to do anything but preach and instruct, yet, despite this, *from time immemorial they have been exterminating by fire and sword all those who are not of their religion....* We (Christians) enjoy the fine advantage of being far better versed than others in the art of killing, bombarding and exterminating the Human Race".

[From: Bayle P; Dictionary, the article Mahomed].

"Many have sought to answer the questions of why the triumph of Islam was so speedy and complete. **Why have so many millions (especially Christians & people of other faiths) embraced Islam and scarcely a hundred ever recanted?** Some have attempted to explain the first overwhelming success of Islam by the argument of the sword.

They forget Carlyle's laconic reply. First get your sword. You must win peoples hearts before you can induce them to imperil their lives for you... Islam not only was at once accepted (by many peoples and races) by Arabia, Syria, Persia, Egypt, Northern Africa and Spain... There must be something in the religion itself to explain its persistence and spread, and to account for its present hold over so large of a proportion of the dwellers on the earth...Islam has stirred an enthusiasm that has never been surpassed...and (the Muslims) have accepted death with a smile for the sake of the faith that was in them. [Stanley Lane Poole, *Study in a Mosque*, pp. 86-89].

“The rapidity of the spread of Islam, noticeably through extensive provinces which had been long Christian, is a crucial fact of History...**The sublime rhetoric of the Qur’aan, that inimitable symphony, the very sounds of which move men to tears and ecstasy.**” [A.J.Arberry, *Aspects of Islamic Civilisation*; p. 12].

“The more important factor for the spread of Islam is the religious law, (Sharia, which is all inclusive, all embracing) which was designed to cover all manifestations of life.”

Rosenthal, Political Thought in Medieval Islam; p.21

“The tolerance of Islam is another factor in the spread of Islam...”

[A Historians Approach to Religion, p. 246. Toynbee].

Thus, Islamic Civilisation has from the outset been tolerant, plural, and inclusive. It always regarded the whole of mankind as its proper constituency and has remained so, with the rarest of exceptions.

The above are quotes from just a few Christian writers. They did not revert to Islam, but nonetheless we as Muslims salute them for their courage in writing impartially.

47. Question: WHY DO MUSLIMS CLAIM THAT THEY ARE MORE WORTHY FOLLOWERS OF JESUS (PBH)?

Answer: To test love is to prove it in actions. Christians claim to love Jesus, but do not follow any of his¹²⁶ teachings and actions.

Muslims truly love Jesus (pbh), whereas Christians only pay lip service and do nothing practically. First and foremost, Muslims accept the first Commandment that Jesus preached, i.e. **“Your Lord God is One”**, and **“Follow the Law”**. A few more examples:

1. Muslims wash their face, hands, and feet before praying, as Moses (pbh) and Jesus (pbh) did. Christians don’t. Refer Exodus 40: 31-32 ¹²⁷
2. Muslims remove their shoes, (refer Exodus 3:5) cover their heads and enter the place of worship. Christians worship with their shoes on and remove their hats.
3. Muslims prostrate on their faces, and pray as Jesus (pbh) ¹²⁸ did in the Garden of Gethsemane when he beseeched God to save him. Christians don’t. They sit on seats / pews in Churches and singsongs.

126 They follow all of Paul’s teachings, who was an avowed enemy to Jesus (pbh)

127 This washing of the face, hands etc is corresponds to : Qur’aan ch 5, v 7.

128 All Prophets fell on their faces and prayed. Refer to the following in the Bible-

4. Muslims never eat pork as Jesus (pbuh) also never ate pork. *'Christians' do.* It is one of their favorite dishes.

'And all the devils besought him, saying, send us into the swine, that we may enter into them.13-And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entered into the swine: Mark chap 5, v. 12 & 13

5. Muslims wash their hands before eating just as Jesus (pbuh) used to do. *Refer Mark chap 7 verse 5. Christians very seldom do.*

6. Muslim males circumcise just as Jesus (pbuh) was circumcised. This is a covenant of God with Prophet Abraham for all time. Christian males don't circumcise.

7. Muslims fast a whole lunar month each year. Jesus (pbuh) also fasted, Christians don't. Jesus (pbuh) said in: *Matt 5 v. 6, 'Blessed are they which do hunger and thirst after righteousness'*

8. Muslim Mosques (Arabic: Masjid) do not have any "Graven Images¹²⁹" as was the case wherein Jesus (pbuh) prayed. Christian Churches are full of graven images as well as paintings of cherubim etc that is contrary to the teachings of Jesus (pbuh). A new trend has emerged amongst Christians at the present time. They hang crosses in their cars, wear neck chains with crosses and are even worshipping the crosses. *Yet there are more than twenty-four verses condemning the worshipping of 'graven images' as the statues and crosses. They have photos of a man that they claim is Jesus (pbuh), and hang them in Churches and their homes.*

Question: *as there were no cameras 2,000 years ago what proof has the Church that the photo is really of Jesus (pbuh)? This photo is a concoction of someone's imagination and is a money-spinner, just as the Bible is revised and re-revised continuously to make money. Allah has warned them in the Qur'aan about this money making game in Chap 2 verse 79!*

(a) Genesis 17:3. (b) Numbers 20:6. (c) Joshua 5:14. (d) Matt 26:39.

129 The following chaps & verses all warn against Graven Images: LEV 26:1 DEUT 4:16, DEUT 4:23 DEUT 4:25 DEUT 5:8 DEUT 7:5., DEUT 7:25 DEUT 12:3 DEUT 27:15, 2CHRON 34:7, PS 78:58., IS 21:9 , IS 30:22, IS 42:8 , IS 42:17 IS 44:9., IS 44:10 IS 44:15., IS 45:20 Assemble yourselves and come; draw near together, ye that are escaped of the nations: they have no knowledge that set up the wood of their graven image, and pray unto a god that cannot save. JER 8:19, JER 10:14, JER 50:38, JER 51:17 JER 51:47, JER 51:52. HOS 11:2., MIC 1:7 MIC 5:13 NAHUM 1:14 , HAB 2:18 In the New testament: ACTS 17:29 Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art and man's device.

9. Majority of Muslim males keep beards. Majority of Christians don't. The Sheikhs and Alims wear the long white robes as Jesus (pbuh) did, but the priests do not. *(If Jesus (pbuh) wanted to enter the USA, he will definitely be barred, branded as a terrorist by mad George Bush because he will be dressed and look as a Muslim).*

10. Muslims bury their dead within 24 hours as Jesus (pbuh) taught. The burial is simple as the body is wrapped in a white cloth and put into the ground. Christians keep the body in cold storage for days, and put the body into a coffin and then bury. Waste of time and money.

The above is proof that Muslims love Jesus (pbuh) more than the Christians as Muslims adhere to the pure teachings of Jesus (pbuh)!

Muslim women cover their heads especially when praying. Even the Bible commands this in –“1 COR 11:5- *But every woman that prayeth or prophesied with her head uncovered dishonoureth her head: for that is even all one as if she were shaven*”. Christian women do not wear head covering. (Except Nuns)

If the 'born again Christians' claim that they are more worthy followers of Jesus (pbuh) than Muslims, then they must prove it by obeying the instruction in *Mark chap 16, vs. Mark17-“**And these signs shall follow them that believe...** Mark 5: 18: They shall take up serpents; **and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them;** they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover”*.

You can bet your boots they will never do it!

48. Question: COULD YOU KINDLY EXPLAIN “THE ORIGINAL SIN” AS CHRISTIANS BELIEVE, AND ALSO ABOUT “INHERITED SIN”.

Answer: The sequence of events of the 'Original Sin' begins with Adam and the tree in Genesis chap 2 vs. 15-17- of the Bible:

Gen.2-15- And the LORD God took the man, and put him into the Garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it. *Gen. 2-16* And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: *Gen.2-17-* But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.

Genesis C.3 v 16, Adam and Eve ate of the tree: Gen 3:17- 'Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in

sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee’.

Questions that need answers: (a) If the original sin is supposed to be inherited by mankind, why did God wait for thousands of years before sending His ‘son’ to offer his outrageous sacrifice to save humanity? (b) What about those who passed away before Jesus (pbuh)? Are they deprived of forgiveness? (c) If God is Merciful and Just, why should he punish innocent people that will be born in the future, hundreds and thousands of years later? (d) Why should you and I be responsible for the act of Adam and Eve? *Is this the much-vaunted justice of God?* It does not make sense because these are artificial doctrines that Jesus (pbuh) and all the prophets never taught. Furthermore, if this original sin was true, then women should not have childbearing pain since after the time of the “alleged crucifixion”! *Why?* Because the Bible states that after the “crucifixion and atonement of sin” the women will no longer have childbearing pains. Since Christian women continue to have labour pains we can see it is a false doctrine.

The Missionaries and the born again Christians, claim that this sin had to be atoned for by Jesus (pbuh) alone as he alone was pure and righteous enough to take away the sins of Adam & Eve and the mysterious inherited sin. So this God of the Christians who is supposed to be merciful **had to do a human sacrifice** of his ‘only begotten¹³⁰ son’ otherwise no forgiveness to the humankind and all of us will go to hell! We will not go into too much detail as most of the argument about this has already been given. However, let us look into the fact of this ‘forgiveness through sacrifice’.

References given below from the Bible:

Question: *Why was it necessary for Jesus to be baptized by John the Baptist in the river Jordan, if Jesus was sinless?*

Matt 3:13: Then cometh Jesus (pbuh) from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him. **Matt 3:16:** and Jesus (pbuh), when he was baptized ...

130 As mentioned in this book, this word ‘begotten’ has been thrown out of the Bible by Thirty Two Christian Scholars of the highest eminence backed by Fifty cooperating denominations as it was found to be a forgery, and an interpolation. If they can get rid of the trinity and atonement of sin through the blood of Jesus they will be very close to Islam.

Mark 1:9: And it came to pass in those days that **Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan.**

If, according to the Church Jesus was sinless, then the baptism was a sham. If it was a sham then who is responsible for preaching this lie?

If this baptism was genuine, then according to the Bible Jesus also was born in sin, so how could he be the one to take away the sins of the whole of mankind? Does this not prove that this is a false doctrine?

Matt 9:13... Jesus says: ...**"for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance"**.

Jesus (pbuh) torpedoed this myth of 'atonement through sacrifice' as he admits that there were righteous people in his presence.

(People with minds enslaved to this 'atonement businesses' will forever reject any proof because they are blind and deaf).

Below are a few quotations from the Old and New Testaments further disproving the atonement theory.

Jeremiah: 31v30- But every one shall die for his own iniquity:

Ezekiel: 18v 19-Yet say ye, Why doth not the son bear the iniquity of the father? When the son hath done that which is lawful and right, and hath kept all my statutes, and hath done them, he shall surely live.

Ezekiel: 18v:20 -The soul that sinneth, it shall die. The son shall not bear the iniquity of the father; neither shall the father bear the iniquity of the son: the righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him, and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon him.

Ezekiel:18v21- But if the wicked will turn from all his sins that he hath committed, and keep all my statutes, and do that which is lawful and right, he shall surely live, he shall not die.

John: 9:1- And as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which was blind from his birth. *John: 9:2-* And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind?

John: 9:3- Jesus answered, **neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents:** but that the works of God should be made manifest in him.

Matt 18v 3- And said, Verily I say unto you, except ye be converted, and become as little children¹³¹, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of

131 It is clear here that children are not born in sin as the Church propagates. The words of Jesus take precedence over any disciple, Pope and the Church. It also means that there is no such thing as an inherited sin which is a false doctrine of the Church

heaven. *Matt 18 v 4* - Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

Forgiveness in the Glorious Qur'aan; "And if anyone does evil or wrongs his own soul, but afterwards seeks Allah's forgiveness, he will find Allah Oft Forgiving, Most Merciful. And if anyone earns sin, he earns sin against his own soul: for Allah is full of knowledge and wisdom. But if anyone earns a fault or a sin and throws it on to one that is innocent he carries (on himself) (both) a falsehood and a flagrant sin". (Q.Chap 4, vs. 110-112) "Is then the man who believes and do righteous deeds no better than the man who is rebellious and wicked? Not equal are they!" (Qur'aan. Chap. 32 v, 18)

"..Allah is our Lord and your Lord. For us are our deeds; and for you your deeds. There is no contention between us and you. Allah will gather us together, and to Him is the eventual coming". Q. 42 v.15

Quote from the book: "Life of a Bengal Tiger" by "Major Yeats Brown" pertaining to the Christian belief of the 'original sin'. "No heathen tribe has conceived so grotesque an idea involving as it does the assumption that man was born with a hereditary stain for which he was not responsible; and it was to be atoned for, and that the Creator of all things had to sacrifice His only 'son' to neutralize this mysterious curse."

Special note for the Missionaries and born agains:

It was reported that when the late Pope John Paul was on his death bed in December 2003, he said: ***'I am pinning my hopes on Mother Mary¹³², (mother of Jesus) for my salvation.'***

Questions: (a) *Did the Pope who was the leader of Christianity, not believe in the atonement through crucifixion?* (b) *Are there are two kinds of salvations? The Popes' having their own kind of salvation through Mother Mary?* (c) *Is this special salvation confirmed anywhere in the Bible?*

These are questions that need serious answers!

The Glorious Qur'aan answers 'this hope' of the Pope and Christians in *chap 18 v 102: "Do those who disbelieve think that they can take*

132 The Christian world felt *"the need for a mediator to deal with the very mediator"*, and thus Mary was raised to the throne of Divinity along with Jesus. This will raise a new question for the Christian world whether Trinity really consists of God, Jesus and Mary? *Is that case what happens to the Holy Ghost?* Has the Holy Ghost been substituted like in a football match? Anyone can see that man made doctrines cause more confusion and chaos. Jesus warned against this in- *Matthew 7:7-Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.*

My servants to be protecting friends besides Me? Surely We have prepared hell as an entertainment for the disbelievers”¹³³.

Chapter 18: 110- Say to them O Muhammed): “I am only a mortal like you – it is revealed to me that your God is one God. So whoever hopes to meet his Lord, he should do good deeds, and join no one in the service of his Lord”.

*Qur’aan Chap. 4:48- “Surely Allah forgives not that a partner should be set up with Him, and forgives all besides that to whom He pleases. And whoever sets up a partner with Allah, he devises indeed a great sin”.*¹³⁴

In May 2007 Pope Ratzinger visited Brazil, the most populous Catholic country in the world. On the 12th May 2007 he said in his speech¹³⁵- *‘The drug dealers will face the wrath of God’.*

Question: According to the doctrine of the Church, anyone (including the drug dealers, prostitutes, rapists, murderers etc) who believes in the forgiveness of sin through the crucifixion will not be held accountable and punished for their wrong doing, then why should the drug dealers still be held accountable for their wrong doing?

Does this not prove once again that it is a false doctrine!

49. Question: CHRISTIANS CLAIM THAT THE BIBLE OF TODAY IS THE WORD OF GOD. CAN THAT BE PROVEN?

Answer: 1 THESS 5:21- Prove all things; hold fast that which is good.

The Glorious Qur’aan challenges in chap 2 v, 111: Say: ...”Bring your proof if you are truthful”. Similar to the Bible’s instruction: prove what you say. The Church has brought proof in 2,000 different languages! But wonders of wonders, all of their proofs are like a sieve

133 The Christians are meant here, as theirs is the most prominent example of having taken a servant of Allah, Jesus (pbuh), for God. But surprisingly it seems the Pope had his own ideas for his own salvation, by pinning his hopes of Mary, the mother of Jesus.

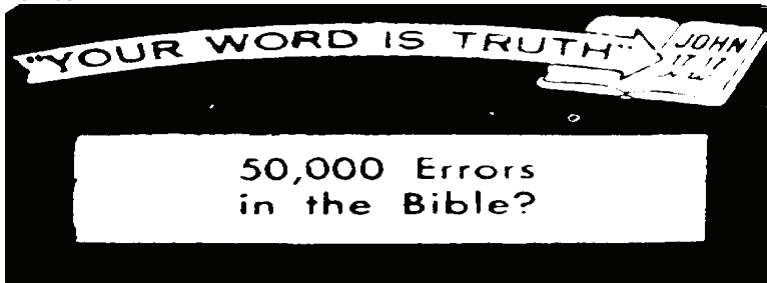
134 Setting up partners with Allah is the gravest sin. A person’s wrong belief does not in any way detract from the glory of God, but a belief in false deities lowers the dignity of man. Man is made to rule nature itself and all creatures, but when he lowers himself before creatures he sets at naught the very purpose of his creation. It should be noted that setting up partners with God does not only mean idol-worship or worship of the forces of nature or a belief in the Divinity of mortals, but also includes the blind obedience which is rendered to great men / women. If a man is guilty of *shirk* (setting up partners with God) and repents of it before his death all his sins including *shirk* are washed off and forgiven because he gives a new turn to his life.

135 Reported by Al-Jazeera English Service- Reporter- *Lucia Newman-*

that holds no water.¹³⁶ Look at the Awake below and you will see that the Bible can never be the word of God!



"Now it is the time to --Romans 13:11
Volume XXXVIII
Brooklyn N.Y. September 8, 1957
Number 17



RECENTLY a young man purchased a King James Version Bible thinking it was without error. One day when glancing through a back issue of **Look magazine** he came across an article entitled "**The Truth About the Bible.**" which said that "as early as 1720, an English authority estimated that there were at least 20,000 errors in the two editions of the New Testament commonly read by Protestants and Catholics. Modern students say there are probably 50,000 errors."

The young man was shocked. His faith in the Bible's authenticity was shaken. "How can the Bible be reliable when it contains thousands of serious discrepancies and inaccuracies?" he asks.

Fact: Reading through this book will convince any reasonable person that the Bible can never be accepted as the Word of God for many reasons. The following are a few of them: **(a)** the language that Jesus

¹³⁶ There is just too much evidence in this book to disprove that the Bibles of every language can ever be accepted as the word of God in its entirety. Yes, a few words here and there, otherwise it is a hotch potch of nonsensical works.

(pbuh) spoke is no longer in existence. The Church calls Greek manuscripts as the original. **(b)** Learned Christians Scholars have debunked this claim of the Bible being the word of God unequivocally. **(c)** Scientific facts mentioned in the Bible are incorrect. **(d)** The four Gospel writers' accounts differ in over 95% of the same narrations. **(e)** There are hundreds of contradictions. **(f)** There are hundreds of unbelievable verses attributed to God. **(g)** The Bible has been revised (*changed*) dozens of time.

A glance at the PREFACE of any Bible will convince a seeker of truth that the Bible¹³⁷ has been REVISED¹³⁸ DOZENS OF TIMES, so it can never be the word of God. If Christians still refuse to admit that the Bible in existence is not the Word of God, then they will have to also admit that Jesus (pbuh) was a Greek! *The rationale for stating this is that the so-called 'original manuscripts' in the Church's possession are in Greek and not in the language that Jesus (pbuh) spoke!*

The Glorious Qur'aan states a fundamental principle of divine law that a messenger of God has to deliver the Divine message in the language of the people to whom he has been sent. It is an established fact that Jesus (pbuh) was from the 'Bani Israeel' and spoke a dialect of Aramaic that is no longer in existence, so he could never have been a Greek! By the same indication, these Greek Manuscripts are not the words spoken by Jesus (pbuh) and cannot be called the word of God.

"And We sent no messenger but with the language of his people, so that he might explain to them clearly." (Al-Qur'ân 14:4)

"So We have made the Qur'ân easy in thy tongue (Arabic) that they may be mindful." (Al-Qur'ân 44:58)

The following extracts from Christian sources prove that the Bible of today is a fabricated and interpolated book

ENCYCLOPEDIA AMERICANA (1956) VOLUME 27, PAGE 294L, STATES:
"Christianity is derived from Judaism and Judaism was (and still is) strictly Unitarian (belief in One God). The road, which led from Jerusalem to Nicea, was scarcely a straight one. 4th century Trinitarianism did not reflect accurately early (Original Bible)

137 There is enough evidence from Christian sources quoted in this book disproving the claims of the Church that the Bible is the Word of God! -*Compiler*

138 Revised by people centuries later and who never met Jesus (pbuh), and till today it is being revised and re-revised, and re-re-revised....

Christian teachings regarding the nature of God. Rather, it was a deviation from this teaching".

ENCYCLOPEDIA BRITANNICA (1976), page 241 states:

"Biblical Basis- neither the word 'Trinity' nor the explicit doctrine as such appears at any one place in the Bible; the ecclesiastical dogma is an effort to unit in one confession all the several strains of biblical description of God. Fundamental to that description in both the Old and New is the monotheistic credo summarized in the Shema of Deuteronomy 6:4-"Hear O Israel! The Lord our God is One Lord"! Neither Jesus (pbuh) nor his early followers intended anything they said about their new revelation to contradict that credo. Constantine himself presided actively guiding the discussions and personally proposed ...the crucial formula expressing the relationship of Christ to God in the creed issued by the council, 'of one substance with the Father'...Overawed by the emperor, (all) the Bishops, with two exceptions only, signed the creed, many of them much against their inclination".

HENRY CHADWICK writes in his book titled 'THE EARLY CHURCH': Constantine who was the chief architect of the doctrine of the Trinity was not a Christian. Constantine, like his father, worshipped the unconquered sun; ...his conversion should not be interpreted as an inward experience of grace...it was a military matter..."

HISTORIAN WILL DURANT: "Christianity did not destroy paganism; it adopted it.

SIEGFRIED MORENZ notes in his book-'Egyptian Religion': "The trinity was a major preoccupation of Egyptian theologians ...in this way the spiritual force of Egyptian religion shows a direct link with Christian theology".

JOHN DAVENPORT writes in his book titled 'Apology to Muhammed and the Qur'aan' regarding the trinity: - This is why blind faith was demanded, and this is why 12,000,000 (twelve million) Christians were put to death by the Church as heretics in the notorious Church 'Inquisitions'!

TOM HARPUR in his book 'For Christ's Sake' in page 45 writes: "The idea of the second person of a holy trinity knowing what it is to be God forsaken has only to be stated to be recognised as absurd"!

The "Daily News" [Natal] Newspaper of the 25th June 1984- states:

"More than half of England's Anglican Bishops say that Christians are not obliged to believe that Jesus Christ was God. In fact 31 of 39

Bishops said so. The Bishops said that it was sufficient to believe in Jesus as "God's supreme agent". Fifteen of the Bishops state that the so-called miracles of Jesus in the New Testament were later additions to the story of Jesus. The majority said regarding the resurrection that it was a 'series of experiences' and Jesus came back in the "flesh and blood or as a spirit in human form".

Professor David Jenkins, the highest-ranking Bishop of the Church of England {Bishop of Durham in northern England} states that he does not believe in the virgin birth and the resurrection as historical events¹³⁹.

In another interview on the dated 15/7/1984 with the London Daily Mail-page 12, **Professor Jenkins** slammed the Divinity and Resurrection Doctrines. He said that they "were not strictly true but were added to the story of Jesus by the early Christians to express their faith in him as a messiah".

Sunday Times -9th October 2005- Catholic Church casts doubt on parts of the Bible. *"The hierarchy of the Roman Catholic Church in Britain has published a document instructing the faithful that some parts of the Bible are not true"*.

Mail & Guardian Newspaper (S.A.) dated 31st March- 2000, Vol 16, No 13- headline banner: *"Jesus was no Christian...and he would never set foot in a Church"*. A full-page article by Amos Ox on page 23 goes on to say that **Jesus was a Jew and was known as "Rabbi" which means 'a teacher' in Hebrew.**

An E.TV newscast on the 08-04-2006 in South Africa at 7pm - stated that National Geographics Magazine ran an article written by Terry Garcia in which he said that -**'According to the Gospels of Judas Iscariot written about the 2nd century' that were recently found, it states- "Judas Iscariot was the best friend of Jesus and it was unlikely that he would have betrayed Jesus and caused him harm.'** *The Vatican has denounced these Gospels, although other 2nd century gospels are parts of the Bible!*

1] Sunday Times [South Africa] dated 9th October 2005- Page 12- CATHOLIC CHURCH CASTS DOUBTS ON PARTS OF BIBLE. (Genesis & Revelations) "These books are full of unscientific data'.

139 Perhaps the reason for the Bishop rejecting the virgin birth is that the Bible is a totally unreliable witness as proved above. If he accepts the Glorious Qur'aan, then he will have no problem in accepting the virgin birth as the Qur'aanic witness is perfect!
The Compiler

2] Citizen [South Africa] dated 11th October 2005 [page-9] **“ALL IN THE BIBLE NOT TRUE”- JESUIT PRIEST.**

3] **Awake magazine from Brooklyn, U.S.A.** volume 38, dated 8th September 1957, states: *‘there are 50,000 errors in the Bible!’*

My God! 50,000 errors! The entire Bible has 31,103 verses. According to the Awake Magazine there are 50,000 errors in the Bible. If one takes an average of one error per verse, then the entire Bible in each verse has a mistake, and subsequently there are another 18,897 mistakes in the Bible.

The learned scholars of Christendom have rejected the authenticity of the Bible for centuries, yet the Vatican and Priests deceive the masses that the Bible is the Word of God.

Brief references from the TIME MAGAZINE dated April 8, 1996. -Page 40 onwards¹⁴⁰- **“Luke’s verses are so laden with ‘Christianizing’ propaganda as to be ‘beyond recovery’.**

1. The 75 scholars that took part agreed with the previous seminar, and concluded that **‘close historical analysis of the Gospels exposes most of them as inauthentic’.**

2. Of the five Gospels (Thomas being the fifth) **“only 18% of the words ascribed to Jesus in the gospels may have been actually spoken by him”.**

3. Mr. Stephen Mitchell, an author of note has deleted many of Jesus’s sayings and events in his life, noting- **“we cannot be sure of anything that Jesus (pbuh) actually said’.**

4. **John was eliminated completely!** Only one sentence of Mark was accepted! Of the Sermon on the Mount in Matt, the only words that were accepted were “our father” and “love your enemies” and four other brief sayings!

5. **“No miracle working made the cut, although Jesus is generally credited with having healed some of the sick”.**

6. As regards the Passion and Easter: **“all descriptions of Jesus’s trial are deemed inauthentic, along with his Palm Sunday statement that he is the Messiah”!**¹⁴¹

140 At a conference held in the Flamingo Resort Hotel Ballroom in Santa Rosa, California, attended by 50 learned **Christian** panelists

141 **The word “Ascension” is not found in the Bible Database** created by Brent Mauer and Cris Fraley [KJV-version 5.1.16] It states that there are **31,103 verses** in the entire Bible- The Old and New Testament **but the word Ascension is not there** (e & o e)

7. **The Seminar voted down Judas' traitorous kiss**, believing it to be either unverifiable or a literary device.
8. Mr. Smith, a seminary student stated, *"Clearly Jesus had to say more than we have on record". His concerns are valid- that if so little can be known of the most basic elements of his life, let alone of the miracles-then on what is Christian belief based?*
9. It has been acknowledged by most Scholars that the four main Gospels have been written by **"ANONYMOUS FOLLOWERS OR THE FOLLOWERS' FOLLOWERS AND NOT BY THE GOSPEL WRITERS"**. The reason being that each presents a different picture of Jesus' life. "The earliest one seems to be written about FORTY YEARS after his alleged crucifixion".
10. "The Life of Jesus written by David Friedrich Strauss (new scientific method used) raises additional questions with increasing urgency like: **Might faith have caused the writers of all four Gospels to embellish on actual fact? Did the politics of the early Church cause them to edit or add to Jesus's story? Which parts of the New Testament were likely to be straight reportage rather than pious mythmaking? They concluded that "depressingly very few' were found to be acceptable as true. They also found "there are only two or three references to Jesus in six pagan or Jewish sources, providing precious little corroborating data, even the Prodigal Son and Good Samaritan are just two of several parables that appear in only one version"**.
11. By 1926 Rudolph Hartman of Germany's University of Marburg, the foremost Protestant Scholar in the field, threw up his hands and called a halt to the inquiries regarding Jesus So unreliable were the Gospel accounts that **"we can now know almost nothing concerning the life and personality of Jesus he said.**
12. Harvard's Elisabeth Schussler Fiorenza contends **"the later Church cloaked Jesus in the Christological garb as the 'Son of God'"**.
13. **"Jesus's rising from the dead was blackballed by the Seminar, an unsurprising move since liberal scholars have always given that seminal miracle little credence"**.
14. It further says-**"the Christ of creed and dogma, who has been firmly in place in the middle ages, can no longer command the assent of those who have seen the heavens through Galileo's telescope"**

15. They further state that that “**Jesus’s culture was preached orally, not written**” and they shunned passages that they felt represented “post-Jesus rationalizing by his disciples”.

16. The “original manuscripts” (*Greek*) of the Bible that the Church has been boasting about for centuries *have never been permitted to be examined and verified by even one Islamic scholar over all these centuries. Muslims have also not been allowed to examine and verify the Red Sea Scrolls that were discovered more than 50 years¹⁴² ago.*

The answers may lie in the fact that these ‘Original Greek Manuscripts’ are bogus; and the Red Sea Scrolls do not contain anything to back up the Bible and the ‘Original Greek Manuscripts¹⁴³’, and these Scrolls may be even contradicting the Bible. In other words they have no proof of the authenticity of their scriptures so they dare not allow independent verification, as they will be exposed in their fraud!

Fact: The Catholics have 73 books in their Bible, and the Protestants have 67 Books in their Bible. Both claim their Bible is divine. We ask: *Can both be divine? They use such fancy words as “Apocrypha” to describe unauthentic books of the Bible so as to bamboozle the lay persons. According to the Oxford Dictionary (1977) the word Apocrypha means –*

“Books excluded from the Canon at the Reformation, doubtfully authentic, sham”. It is clear that there are books included in the Bible that are a sham and not accepted by Christian Scholars, the Church and the Protestants, but the lay person has to accept and believe in them all!

50. Question: PLEASE QUOTE SOME OF THE ABSURDITIES AND CONTRADICTIONS IN THE BIBLE, AS MY CHRISTIAN FRIEND SAYS THERE ARE NO SUCH THINGS IN THE BIBLE

Answer: This has always been the stance of those Christians who have never read the complete Bible even once in their lives. Unfortunately the majority of Christians fall into this category.

142 Discovered in 1947

143 How many people are aware that the Church has over 24,000 ‘original Greek Manuscripts’, but no two are alike? *Anyone will respond by saying: My God! They have over 24,000 of them but no two are alike?* This really means that there is no corroborating evidence of any of their scriptures that they boast about! The only conclusion is that the ‘textual critics’ have concocted the Bible according to their own whims and fancies and passed it off as Word of God. ***Diabolical!***

If they had taken the trouble to read it completely then I am sure that they would have realized that a very small portion of the Bible contains words that Jesus himself may have spoken. The rest of the Bible is a mixture of a **few** words of God, **some** words of Prophets, **plenty** of words of historians, **some** words of the disciples, and the rest is a pious fraud with corrupted text.

I quote from the Bible some of the absurdities and contradictions and the readers can decide for themselves if God could ever have been the author of such absolute nonsense. I apologize for using such a harsh word, but I am sure that after you read the quotations then anyone with intellect will agree that it is absolutely **NONSENSE!**

*The following are a **small selection of absurdities with references:***

Genesis chap 2: 1-3- 'God rested from all the work He had done'.

Genesis chap 6:6 - 'the Lord repented / grieved because of humans' sins and actions'.

Genesis chap 32:24- 'Jacob wrestled with God'

Exodus chap 33: 20-23- 'Moses (pbuh) saw the back part of God'.

2 Samuels chap 22: 7-13- 'God was angry...smoke came out of His nostrils...

Ezekiel chap 4:12- 'Ezekiel ordered to eat food made from human excrement'

Isaiah chap 7:20- 'God is described as a barber'

Isaiah chap 20:2-3- 'God ordered Isaiah to go around naked and barefoot'

Psalms chap 44:23- 'Awake Oh Lord! Why do you sleep?'

Psalms chap 78:65- 'God woke up as from sleep like a man¹⁴⁴ wakes up from the stupor of wine'

144- All these sayings portray God as a man, yet the Bible says that no one has seen Him. The Glorious Qur'aan says-"**Nothing is like Him**". So can these quotations be correct? *Imam Ghazzali says: "God has got no length and breath as these are attributes of a body which is an originated thing. Its Creator existed from before it. So how would He enter in a body, as He existed by Himself before all originated things and there was nobody along with Him? He is an All Knowing, Almighty, Willing Creator. These attributes are impossible for a body. He exists by Himself without the substances of a body. He is not like any worldly thing, rather He is ever living, ever lasting, and nothing is like Him. Where is the similarity of the Creator with the created, the Fashioner with the fashioned? Hence it is impossible that anything can ever resemble Him!"* Vol 1, page 130

*A list of Biblical contradictions by Mr. Jim Merritt: "The Bible is riddled with repetitions and contradictions. The Gospel of John disagrees with the other three Gospels on the activities of Jesus and all four Gospels of Christ's last moments and resurrection. The Gospels of Matthew and Luke contradict each other on the genealogy of Jesus Christ's father; though both agree that Joseph was not his real father. Repetitions and contradictions are understandable for a hodgepodge of documents, but not for some carefully constructed treatise, reflecting a well thought out plan. **This is an amusing misdirection to the problem that the Bible itself is WRONG.**"*

According to another Christian scholar, Mr. Dummelow, the 1st printed Bible with chaps appeared in 1525 and the 1st Bible divided into verses appeared in 1551. In 1536 Tyndale wrote his Bible. However the Church accused him of "trying to pervert the meaning of the Bible" and publicly executed him for this 'grave sin'. Under Henry VIII, the Bible was 'revised' [changed] again. Thereafter it was 'revised' [changed] under Queen Elizabeth and then 'revised' [changed] yet again under King James at Hampton Court in 1611. Since then it has undergone many more 'revisions' [*changes*] as stated in the prefaces of the different versions of the Bibles. At a conservative guess it must have been 'revised' [*changed*] more than 20 times since 1525. The most recent 'major revisions' [meaning great changes] were made in 1952 and 1971.

It is a proven fact that there is no ORIGINAL GOSPEL IN THE LANGUAGE SPOKEN BY JESUS (PBUH) in existence. This fact alone is proof enough that all the Bibles of every language in existence today in the world can never be called the word of God. For anything to be called original it has to be in the **original language** and that is not in existence in the case of the Bible!

*The following are the just **some** of the contradictions with the references so that your friend can refer to the Bible to verify them;*

<p><i>Is the Lord a man of war or peace?</i> Exodus 15:3 - The Lord is a man of war; the Lord is his name</p>	<p>Roman 15:33 - Now the God of peace be with you all. Amen</p>
<p><i>Who was Joseph's father?</i> Matt 1:16- Joseph's father is Jacob</p>	<p>Luke 3:23 - Joseph's father is Heli</p>

<p><i>Who was at the Tomb? 3 versions of 3 "According to's" of who was at the Tomb:</i></p> <p>Matt 28:1-two Mary (pbuh) were at the tomb</p>	<p>Mark 16:1- Mary Magdalene, Mary the mother of James, and Salome were at the Tomb.</p> <p>John 20:1 - Only Mary Magdalene came alone</p>
<p><i>Is Jesus (pbuh) equal to or lesser than?</i></p> <p>John 10:30- I and my Father are one</p>	<p>John 14:28-Ye have heard how I said unto you...for my Father is greater than I</p>
<p><i>Is God good to all or just a few?</i></p> <p>Psalms 145:9- The Lord is good to all, and his tender mercies are over all his works.</p>	<p>Jeremiah 13:14 -And I will dash them one against the other, even the fathers and the sons together, saith the Lord: I will not pity, nor spare, nor have mercy, but destroy them</p>
<p><i>Is it folly to be wise or not?</i></p> <p>Ecc 1:18- For much wisdom is much grief; and he that increaseth knowledge increaseth sorrow.</p>	<p>Proverbs 4:7 - wisdom is the principal thing; therefore get wisdom, and with all thy getting get understanding.</p> <p>1 Cor.1:19 - For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent</p>
<p><i>The sins of the father</i></p> <p>Isaiah 14:21- Prepare slaughter for his children for the iniquity of their fathers; that they do not rise, nor possess land, nor fill the face of the world with cities</p>	<p>Deut. 24:16-The fathers shall not be put to death for the children, neither shall the children be put to death for the fathers: every man shall be put to death for his own sin</p>
<p>KJV - Mark-16. Number of verses are 20</p> <p><u>Note:</u> <i>Anyone can see that HUMAN "The word of God" by adding and</i></p>	<p>RSV - Mark-Chap 16 has got only 8 verses</p> <p><i>HANDS have played around with deleting as they please</i></p>
<p>1 Chronicles -20: v 11-. So Gad came to David, and said unto him, Thus saith the LORD, Choose thee 1 Chro 11-1 2. Either three years' famine;</p>	<p>2 Samuel -v 13 So Gad came to David, and told him, and said unto him, Shall seven years of famine</p>
<p>2 Samuel 24:1. And again the anger of the LORD was kindled against Israel, and he moved David against them to say, Go, number Israel and Judah.</p>	<p>1 Chronicles 21: v 1: And Satan stood up against Israel, and provoked David to number Israel.</p>

<p>John 1 v 18: No man hath seen God at any time... <i>Also in the following places it states that no man can see God-</i> Exodus 33:20; 1 Timothy 6:16; <i>Truly amazing that the "Same Bible," same John, same Exodus- says God cannot be seen</i></p>	<p>Exodus 33 v 11: And the LORD spake unto Moses (pbuh) face to face, as a man speaketh unto his friend. <i>The exact opposite is stated in : Genesis 32:20; Exodus 33:11; 33:23; 24:9,10; Amos 9:1; Genesis 26:2; John 14:9; Same Bible, same John, same Exodus- says God can be seen</i></p>
<p>Cruel God- Jeremiah13:14 - And I will dash them one against another, even the fathers and the sons together, saith the LORD: I will not pity, nor spare, nor have mercy, but destroy them.</p>	<p>Merciful God- James 5:11-that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy. <i>Also merciful in 1 John 4:16; Psalms 145:9</i></p>
<p>God Tempted: Genesis 22:1- ... "God did tempt Abraham "</p>	<p>God does not tempt- James 1:13- ...For God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man:</p>
<p><i>How did Judas die?</i> Acts 1:18- Now this man (Judas) purchased a field with the reward of iniquity; and falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out.</p>	<p>Matt 27:5- And he (Judas) cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself. <i>Note: There is no clarity even on how Judas died. So how much more non-clarity there must be in the important beliefs??</i></p>
<p><i>What was Jesus (pbuh)' prediction regarding Peter's denial? One cockcrow?</i> Matt 26:34- Verily I say unto thee, That this night, before the cockcrow, thou shalt deny me thrice.</p>	<p><i>Or Two cock crows?</i> Mark 14:30-Verily I say unto thee, That this day, even in this night, before the cockcrow twice, thou shalt deny me thrice.</p>
<p>Who Bears Guilt? Galatians 6:5- For every man shall bear his own burden.</p>	<p>Exact opposite in Galatians 6:2 Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfil the law of Christ.</p>
<p>Samuels 13:1 <i>There is Text Missing in RSV in the above reference. Has God or the Holy Ghost or those inspired have forgotten to write in the missing text?</i></p>	<p>1 Samuels 13:1 <i>In the KJV It says that Saul reigned for 1 YEAR and then immediately in the VERY SAME VERSE it says Saul reigned 2 YEARS. How can anyone rule for 1 YEAR and AT THE SAME TIME RULE FOR 2 YEARS?</i></p>
<p>2 Kings 8:26: Ahaziah was 22 years old when he began to reign</p>	<p>2 Chronicles 22:2: Ahaziah was 42 years old when he began to reign</p>
<p>Matt 8:28: Jesus (pbuh) was met by 2 men possessed by devils</p>	<p>Luke 8:27: Jesus (pbuh) was met by 1 person possessed by devils</p>

<i>John 5:37: Ye have neither heard His (God's) voice at any time, nor seen His shape</i>	<i>John 14:9: He that has seen me hath seen the Father...</i>
<i>Matt 27:3-5 & 1 Cor 15:5 States there were 12 disciples</i>	<i>Matt 28:16 States there were 11 disciples</i>
<i>Luke 3:23 Says Jesus (pbuh) was 30 years old when he departed</i>	<i>John 8:57 Says that Jesus (pbuh) was 50 years old when he departed</i>
<i>2 Chronicles 9:25: Solomon has 4,000 stalls of horses</i>	<i>1 Kings 4:26 Solomon had 40,000 stalls of horses</i>
<i>2 Chronicles 4:5 Solomon had 3,000 baths</i>	<i>1 Kings 7:26 Solomon had 2,000 baths</i>
<i>2 Kings 24:8: Jehoiachin was 18 years old when he became king</i>	<i>2 Chronicles 36:9: Jehoiachin was 8 years old when he became king</i>
<i>Luke 23:36: Simon of Cyrene carried the cross</i>	<i>John 19:17 Jesus (pbuh) carried his own cross</i>
<i>Psalms 121:4: Behold, He that keepeth Israel shall neither slumber nor sleep</i>	<i>Psalms chap 44:23 Awake Oh Lord! Why do you sleep</i>
<i>John 3:13 No one ascended to heaven...</i>	<i>2 Kings 2:11: And Elijah ascended to heaven...(before Jesus (pbuh) 's time)</i>

There are just too many contradictions. Please refer to the following chapters and verses for more contradictions:

<i>2 Chronicles 6:36</i>	<i>& 1 John 3:9</i>
<i>2 Samuel 24:1</i>	<i>&. 1 Chronicles 21:1</i>
<i>1 Samuels 28:6</i>	<i>&. 1 Chronicles 10:13-14</i>
<i>Acts 9:7</i>	<i>Galatians 6:2 & Galatians 6:5& Acts 22:9</i>
<i>Proverbs 18:22</i>	<i>& 1 Corinthians 7 (see 1,2,27,39,40)</i>
<i>Matt 5:16</i>	<i>& Matt 6:3-4</i>
<i>One or two men at the Sepulture? Mark 16:5</i>	<i>& Luke 24:4</i>
<i>Proverbs 26:4</i>	<i>& Proverbs 26:5 (immediate contradiction)</i>
<i>John 1:18 & 1 Timothy 6:16& Exodus 33:20 (no-one can see God)</i>	<i>Exodus 33:11 & Exodus 24:10 & Genesis 32:30 (Jacob and Moses (pbuh) saw God)</i>
<i>In John 3:12 Jesus (pbuh) is speaking to his disciples in their presence on earth</i>	<i>In the same verse he says- "...Even the Son of man which is in Heaven". Was he on earth or heaven?</i>

In the book of Jeremiah 8:8 it says: "How can we say we are wise and the law of the Lord is with us? Behold, the false pen of the scribe has made it into a lie".

Mentioned below are a few versions of different Bibles that are all claiming to be the 'word of God'-

Roman Catholic Douay Version	New World Translation
King James Version-1604	New King James Version-1979
Teen Study Bible-Revised Edition (NIV)	New World Translation
Darby Translation	American Standard Version
Revised Standard Version	New International Version (NIV)

New American Standard Bible (NASB) The Book of Mormon

51. Question: MY CHRISTIAN NEIGHBOUR DISPUTES THAT INCEST, VIOLENCE AND ADULTERY IS MENTIONED IN THE BIBLE, COULD YOU CLARIFY, PLEASE?

Answer: As stated earlier, majority of the Christians have never read the complete Bible and they do not know what is actually written in the Bible. Here are a few examples - **Adultery and incest:**

Genesis 19:30- Lot committed incest with his daughters

Genesis 38: 1-30 - Judah committed incest with his daughter-in-law¹⁴⁵

Ezekiel 23: This chap was published as "Candid Outburst" in South Africa and was banned under the Publications Control Act. There were two Dominees (Priests) on the Board of the Publications Control Council and they agreed with the banning. It was only later when they were informed that it was part of their Bible that they got a shock of their lives. This is proof that even the 'Dominees' have not read the whole Bible. How much more so the ordinary Christian?

Judges 16:1- Samson commits adultery with a prostitute

Genesis 35:22- Reuben commits adultery with Jacob's concubine

2 Samuel 13: 5-14 -rape and incest between brother & sister

2 Samuels 16:22- rape and incest between son and mother

And the list goes on & on...

145 According to the Bible Jesus's (pbuh) forefathers descended from this incestuous relationship! Can anyone believe this absolute rubbish? *As-Tagfirullah!*

Violence: *Deuteronomy 20:16-* ... you will spare nothing that breathes... (*even animals*) *Numbers 31:17-* ...Kill all males, females except virgins, male babies....

Question: *Can virgins be examined without violating them?*

1 Samuels 15:1-7: ...Saul destroyed all the people with the edge of the sword...

Joshua 8:25-...so Joshua burnt Ai (a town) and made it forever a heap of ruins, as it is to this day...

Psalms 137:9- **Happy is he who dashes little babies against the wall.**

Can anyone believe this madness of dashing babies against walls and being happy???

DEUT 25:11- **“When men strive together one with another, and the wife of the one draweth near for to deliver her husband out of the hand of him that smiteth him, and putteth forth her hand, and taketh him by the secrets: DEUT 25:12 Then thou shalt cut off her hand, thine eye shall not pity her”¹⁴⁶.**

Can God really order this? That if a wife helps save her husband's life then her hand must be chopped off by her own husband and no pity must be shown to her? The wives of born agains better take note!

More Foolish Descriptions of God in the Bible!

Samuel 6:19 - God murders 50,070 people for looking in a box; Isaiah 5:26- & Zechariah 10:8- ...a hissing God; Isaiah 42:13 & Jeremiah 25:30- a roaring God; 2 Samuel 22:11- God riding a cherub; Jeremiah 20:7- God deceives Jeremiah; Genesis 2:1-3; “God rested from all the work He had done”; 2 Samuels 22:7-13 - “God was angry...smoke came out from His nostrils...”

Psalms 44:23 - “Awake oh LORD! Why do you sleep?”

Read about the whoredoms of two sisters: Ezekiel 23:1-49 and Hosea 4:12 & 6:10 & 9:1 in the New World Translation (no sane person with shame will read these verses to his daughters, sisters and mother, or any decent female).

146 In the NATAL MERCURY, of K.Z.NATAL of February 12 1988, an Irish woman, Anne Spicer, had asked the censors in Ireland to BAN THE BIBLE for “glorifying violence and sex”. This lady has read the Bible from cover to cover so she knows what is written inside. **Muslims salute her!**

Note: The Glorious Qur'aan deals a deathblow to all of the above fabrications and absurdities and declares all prophets to be sinless.

Glorious Qur'aan: Chap 3:160- ... "and it is not for any prophet to act dishonestly..."

Today many Christians like Anne Spicer are refusing to acknowledge the Bible as the Word of God, as this claim goes against all logic and reason. Can any intelligent person believe all this nonsense to be the Word of God?

52. Question: ARUN SHOURIE SAYS THAT IN CH. 4, VERSE NO. 11 & 12 OF THE QUR'AAN... 'IF YOU ADD UP THE DIFFERENT PARTS OF INHERITANCE GIVEN TO THE HEIRS, THE SUM TOTAL IS MORE THAN ONE. THEREFORE, HE CLAIMS THAT THE AUTHOR OF THE QUR'AAN DOES NOT KNOW MATHS. PLEASE CLARIFY.

Answer: The Glorious Qur'aan speaks about inheritance in many verses: In Surah Baqarah, Ch. No. 2, Verse No. 180, in Surah Baqarah, Ch. No. 2, Verse No. 240, in Surah Nisa, Ch. No. 4, Verse No. 9, it is mentioned in Surah Nisa, Ch. No. 4, Verse No. 19, Surah Maidah, Ch. No. 5, Verse No. 105. Regarding the detailed explanation of the shares, it is mentioned in the Qur'aan in Surah Nisa, Ch. No. 4, Verse No. 11, 12 and No. 176.

Regarding the translation of the verse quoted by Arun Shourie, in Surah Nisa, Ch. No. 4, Verse No. 11 and 12, it says... "Regarding the shares of inheritance for your children, the male get a part double than that of a female. If only daughters two or more, they share in $2/3^{\text{rd}}$, if only one daughter she gets half and the verse continues, as regarding the parents - they each get $1/6^{\text{th}}$ share if they have children. If no children, their mother gets $1/3^{\text{rd}}$ - After paying of the legacies and debts. Verse No. 12, says that... in what your wives leave for you, you get half if no children and $1/4^{\text{th}}$ if there are children after paying of the debts and legacies. In what you leave for your wives, they share $1/4^{\text{th}}$ if no children and $1/8^{\text{th}}$ if there are children".

It may sound confusing but it is not. One must understand that inheritance is a very important issue that can cause families to break up etc, so that is why Allah in His wisdom has given so much of details on the shares.

In Verse No. 11 of Surah Nisa, Ch. 4, the first share that is mentioned is of the children, then of the parents and later on in Verse No. 12, it gives the share of the spouses. The Glorious Qur'aan gives the

guidance and the Prophet gave the practical applications in his Ahadith. A man can spend many years only doing research on inheritance. Arun Shourie expects to know about this just by quoting two verses. It is somewhat similar to a person who wants to solve an arithmetical equation and does not know the basic rule of arithmetic, which is BODMAS.

According to the rule of B-O-D-M-A-S, irrespective of whichever arithmetical sign comes first or last, first you have to solve 'Brackets Off' - 'BO', then 'D' that is 'Division', then 'M' that is 'Multiplication', then 'A' that is 'Addition' and then 'S' that is 'Subtraction'. If we do not know the rule of BODMAS - and if first you do subtraction, then multiplication, then addition, then brackets off, you will surely get the answers wrong. In the same way, Arun Shourie himself does not know maths because for the division of inheritance, according to the Islamic law, first share goes to the spouses and the parents. After that whatever is remaining is shared between the children. If you follow this rule, the sum total can never come to more than one.

53. Question: WHO IS GREATER? JESUS OR MUHAMMED!

Answer: First let me put the Islamic status of the prophets in perspective from the Glorious Qur'aan.

"The Messenger believes in what has been revealed to him from his Lord, and (so do) the believers. They all believe in Allah and His angels and His Books and His messengers. We make no difference between any of His messengers. And they say: We hear and obey; our Lord, Thy forgiveness (do we crave), and to Thee is the eventual course. Glorious Qur'aan. Chapter 2 verse 285.

The Muslims make no distinction between any of the Prophets of Allah, be it Moses, Jesus, Abraham, Lot, Noah, David, Solomon or Muhammed (peace be upon them all).

Christian missionaries pose these types of devious questions and they have always used deceptive information to trick Muslims, but Alhumdulillah (praise be to Allah) in very few cases has this type of ***abominable and unpardonable tactics*** worked.

These missionaries say: Jesus's name is mentioned 25 times in the Qur'aan and Muhammed (pbut) is mentioned by name only 5 times, so who is greater?

On the issue of Jesus (pbuh) mentioned by name 25 times ¹⁴⁷ in the Glorious Qur'aan and Muhammed (pbuh) mentioned 5 times in the Glorious Qur'aan:

(1) There were allegations against Jesus (pbuh) during the time he was on earth and more so after Allah raised him up. There were no allegations against Muhammed (pbuh).

(2) Suppose I have to address a person who is present, I just have to say... you, he, him, her, she, my cousin, my brother, my father and so on. I need not take his name each time I refer to one of them.

*As the Qur'aan was being revealed directly to the Prophet via the archangel Gibraeel, Allah addressed the Prophet as: "O Nabi, O Prophet, and O Messenger"- and hundreds of time Allah says to the Prophet: "Qul", which means: "Say to them". Remember the Qur'aan was being revealed gradually and each time revelation came it was *being communicated directly to the prophet himself* and he repeated the words to the people. In certain specific places the Prophet was addressed by name, and when one refers to those particular 5 verses in the Qur'aan where the Prophet was addressed by name, one will see why it was necessary to address the Prophet by name. There was no need to take his name all the time.*

It is vital for Christians of every denomination to recognize that Islam is the only non-Christian faith, which makes it an article of faith to believe in Jesus (pbuh). We part from the Christians and the Church on the issue of divinity. We believe he is a great (human) messenger of Allah and we have presented plenty of proof in this book from the Bible and the Glorious Qur'aan on this. Only the most inflexible dogmatic of Christians will reject the arguments that have been displayed.

Next I ask the Christians: If being raised up alive is a criteria to judge greatness then that means Christians must accept Elijah to be greater than Jesus (pbuh) on the basis of that argument; as the Bible states Elijah was raised up alive without dying first. So according to their standard Elijah is greater.

According to the Qur'aan (chap 4, v, 157) Jesus (pbuh) was not crucified... **'They killed him not, neither did they crucify him'. We**

147. *Statistics from the KJV: The name of Jesus (pbuh) is mentioned 500 times in 936 verses; and the name of Moses (pbuh) is mentioned 500 times in only 783 verses! Does that make Moses (pbuh) greater than Jesus (pbuh) as his name is mentioned 500 times in 153 verses LESS in the Christian Bible? These types of comparisons are ludicrous and nonsensical as one can see! These stupid comparisons always backfire on these Christian missionaries, as it is childish and nonsensical.*

*believe in the Qur'aan but even according to your interpolated Bible also, if properly analyzed, it says he was not crucified and neither was he killed*¹⁴⁸. His own people to whom he was sent did not accept him to be a messenger of God. (Matt 10:5-6 and Matt 15: 22-26)

The Qur'aan says in Ch. No. 4, Verse No. 171 **'O people of the book - do not go to extremes in your religion'**. [1]. *Jews said he was an imposter and [2]. Christians said that he was son*¹⁴⁹ *of God/ God Almighty. These are extremes.* Islam says: speak not of God but the truth, and speak only the truth.

Jesus was an Israelite prophet¹⁵⁰. No Israelite will ever worship another Israelite as they know that he is a human being / mortal as they are, and subject to the same needs as food etc. **God alone is without a need.** Jesus (pbuh) was raised up alive without being killed on the cross to save his life from the treacherous plot of the Jews. In his second coming he will not teach humanity anything new but will come to set the record straight of his human nature and to destroy the cross which is being worshipped.

'On this day, I (Allah) have perfected your religion for you and have chosen for you Islam as the way of life'. *Qur'aan Chap. 5, V, 3*

As Allah has already perfected His religion, Jesus (pbuh) will bring no new revelation. *Jesus (pbuh) will come to clarify the misconceptions about him as a huge portion of mankind have gone astray in the wrong belief about him. He will come for the Christians and Jews: not for the Muslims.*

Next: Suppose that a person does not have a father and you claim that on account of that he is God Almighty; then the Qur'aan gives the answer in *Ch. 3, Verse, 59-* **"Lo! The likeness of Jesus before Allah is as the likeness of Adam. He created him of dust, and then He said unto him: Be! And he is."**¹⁵¹

148 Read the arguments in this book regarding the crucifixion which is FICTION

149 Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) warned Muslims in Sahih Bukari vol 4, book 5, number 654, narrated by Omar (r.a) **"Do not exaggerate in praising me as the Christians praised the son of Mary (pbuh) , for I am only a slave of Allah"**.

150 It is very important to note that Jesus (pbuh) was an Israelite and not a Jew, as the Jews are an illegitimate race. *Read Mr. Ebrahim's analysis chap 6*

151 Bible: GEN 28:14 -God said to Adam-"And thy seed shall be as the dust of the earth"... We know that Mary the mother of Jesus as well as David and the whole of humanity are the seed of Adam just as Jesus is. Is the Church claiming that God is also dust because their doctrine states that Jesus is as the same substance as God?

Adam and Jesus (pbuh) both did not have fathers; both were created from dust just by a word - 'Kun' (Be) during different times. If you claim that a person who does not have a father is God Almighty, then Adam is a bigger God, *according to the Christian Church's criteria as Adam had no father and no mother.* .

The Bible speaks about another super human - King Malchisedec - he had no ascent, no decent, no beginning, and no end. He is greater than even Adam. So on the basis of the missionaries' / Church / Christian's criteria, King Malchisedec is greater than Jesus (pbuh). Should they not be worshipping him?

An important point to remember is that Moses, David and Jesus (pbuh) had already foretold the coming¹⁵² of Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) hundreds of years before his advent. Allah reminds the Jews and Christians in the Qur'aan: chap 61: v 6 to 9 & chap 7: v 157-158) that this is the Prophet that was foretold in their original scriptures.

Did not Jesus (pbuh) also say in *John 16:13 Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come. John 16:14 He shall glorify me: for he shall receive of mine, and shall shew it unto you.*

The prophet Muhammed (pbuh) was known as "AL-AMEEN" meaning "The Truthful" by all the people of Makkah even before prophethood. The above quotation fits only the Prophet of Islam. **The Qur'aan was revealed orally and the Prophet heard the revelation.** Most definitely the prophet received portions of the same message that was given to Jesus (pbuh) by Allah, as the message in essence is the same. **That is there is only ONE GOD!**

John 14:26- But the Comforter, 'which is the Holy Ghost', whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.

If one carefully reads the above verse, and scrutinizes it, one will notice that the words 'which is the Holy Ghost' are an addition and could not have been part of the original text. The following are convincing reasons for making such a statement -

The Holy Ghost was coming and going all of the time while Jesus (pbuh) was on earth as is stated many times in the Bible. So the Holy Ghost is automatically excluded! This verse is talking about a

152 Refer answer to question Number 56

"Comforter" *who is going to come in the future*, and who has not yet come into the world, and who will speak to human beings. The Holy Ghost spoke to Jesus (pbuh) only, but Jesus (pbuh) is saying here that "he"-*meaning the Comforter* - will teach you all things, and "he"- the Comforter-will bring things to all the peoples remembrance. To re-iterate, it could by no means have been the Holy Ghost that Jesus (pbuh) was referring to! It can only be the Prophet of Islam, Muhammed (pbuh) who has brought all things to our remembrance!

2. The Holy Ghost is neither male nor female, and has always been referred to as the Holy Ghost in the Bible. So the Holy Ghost is excluded as the male gender of "HE" is stated EIGHT TIMES. There is not another verse in the complete Bible that has eight "he's" mentioned in just one verse, except this particular verse! This proves the words 'which is the Holy Ghost' are an addition and could not have been part of the original text.

Further, the words '*in my name*' are also an interpolation, as *God will never send anyone except in God's name!* That is why in the Qur'aan all of the chapters begin with: "In the name of ALLAH, the Beneficent, the Merciful". So here again is a fulfillment of the above prophecy of Jesus (pbuh). It was the deliberate fraud of the scribes that has corrupted the clear words of Jesus (pbuh)! A very important fact often deliberately overlooked by all the Christians is that in over 2,000 years nobody except PROPHET MUHAMMED (PBUH) has spoken about Jesus (pbuh) and exonerated him from the false accusations of the Jews, and also from claiming divinity as the Church is advocating; as well as the false doctrine of the atonement of sins by crucifixion taught by Paul. Can any Christian who is sincerely looking for the truth ignore all of the above facts?

Muslims pose the following important questions¹⁵³ to the Christians and especially the missionaries and demand answers to:

(1) In over 2,000 years has any new laws and teachings been forthcoming from anyone **except Prophet Muhammed (pbuh)**?

Read Qur'aan Chap 61.

153 Jesus said: 'there are many things to say unto you- howbeit you cannot bear them now' etc: Reference: John 16 v 13-'when he will come he will lead you unto all truth' etc. It is more than 2,000 years now since Jesus (pbuh) left this earth, and is it possible that in all that time God did not send anyone with that guidance he spoke of? If Christians read the Glorious Qur'aan they will that guidance Jesus (pbuh) spoke of guaranteed! The Church is refusing through stubbornness to accept the Glorious Qur'aan because it will lose its power. **There is no papacy in Islam!**

(2) Has anyone **besides Prophet Muhammed** (pbuh) spoken of the miraculous birth of Jesus (pbuh) in over 2,000 years? **This miracle can only be proven through the Glorious Qur'aan!** Because if one takes the Bible as a witness it cannot prove his miraculous birth as it is full of errors and unscientific data that no reasonable person will accept as a witness. The Bible's narration of the birth of Jesus is vulgar. *Read Qur'aan Chaps 3 & 5 about the miraculous birth of Jesus (pbuh) narrated in sublime term sand compare!*

(3) Has anyone **besides Prophet Muhammed** (pbuh) exonerated the mother of Jesus (Mary) of the serious accusations of the Jews in more than 2,000 years? *Read chaps 3, 5, & 19 of the Glorious Qur'aan.* Chap 19 - is named after the mother of Jesus, titled "Surah Maryam" (Mary). *Question: Has the Bible a chapter named after her?*

(4) Has anyone **besides Prophet Muhammed** (pbuh) exonerated the false accusations against Prophets Noah, David, Solomon, Jesus (pbut) and many other prophets in more than 2,000 years?

Read Chap 21 titled "The Prophets".

(5) Has anyone **besides Prophet Muhammed** (pbuh) addressed problems besetting the human race like: the scourge of alcoholism, gambling and idol worship in over 2,000 years with divine scripture? *Read Glorious Qur'aan chap 5, verses 90 onwards.*

(6) Has anyone **besides Prophet Muhammed** (pbuh) addressed the problem of extra women in the world today?

Read Glorious Qur'aan chap 4 titled "Women".

Taking into account all the above factors, can there be any doubt that it is Prophet Muhammad that Jesus (pbut) spoke about? He has already come and gone, and left behind a perfect and everlasting law, the Glorious Qur'aan.

In chap 61, verse 6 of the Glorious Qur'aan the Prophet's name is spoken by Jesus (pbuh), when he informed his followers that a Prophet by the name of "AHMED" was to come after him, which is a fulfillment of Deut 18:18 where it foretells about a Prophet to come from among the *brethren of the Israelites, like unto Moses (pbuh)*¹⁵⁴. The Gospel of Barnabas clearly mentions the name of Muhammed (pbuh) as the person mentioned by Jesus (pbuh) that was to come. The Vatican has deliberately excluded this Gospel for obvious reasons. Yet

154 The similarities between Prophet Moses (pbuh) and Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) are mentioned in this book. Please refer to them.

in the Bible Barnabas is mentioned as one of the Disciples of Jesus (pbuh) and it says in Colossians, chap 4, verse 10 - "...Barnabas touching whom ye received commandments: if he come unto you, receive him"; also in Acts of Apostles, 4:36 "And Joses, who by the apostles was surnamed **Barnabas**, (which is, being interpreted, the son of consolation,) a Levite, and of the country of Cyprus":

The Church disowns his Gospels because of vested interests.

To summarize: If I am referring to my brother or a friend who is not in my presence I have to take his name when I speak about him. In the same manner Jesus (pbuh) was not present when the Qur'aan was revealed so his name had to be taken. Prophet Moses (pbuh) is mentioned 132 times in the Qur'aan, as he was also not present.

Question- does it mean Moses (pbuh) is greater than both Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) and Jesus (pbuh) as his name is mentioned more times than both of them put together?

Question: Statistics from the KJV Bibles state: **The name of Jesus is mentioned 500 times in 936 verses; and the name of Moses is mentioned 500 times in only 783 verses! Does that make Moses greater than Jesus, as his name is mentioned 500 times in 153 verses LESS in the Christian Bible?**

*It is to the shame of the Christian missionaries that they use these diabolical means to propagate. **Jesus said: 'By their fruits you shall know them'.***

54. Question: THE QUR'AAN SAYS THAT NO ONE BESIDES GOD KNOWS THE SEX OF THE CHILD IN THE MOTHER'S WOMB. MODERN SCIENCES HAVE DEVELOPED CERTAIN TESTS BY WHICH WE CAN DETERMINE THE SEX OF THE CHILD IN THE WOMB. HOW DO YOU RESPOND?

Answer: As a medical doctor¹⁵⁵ I know that today there are many medical tests to determine the sex of a child in the womb; for example, amiocentencis & ultra sonography, which can determine the sex of child. The question posed is: Is this a scientific error in the Qur'aan?

What is referred to here is a verse from Ch. 31, v, 4. The misconception is that there are a few translations that have mentioned that no one besides Allah knows the sex of the child in the womb. *In the original Arabic text of the Qur'aan the word sex is not mentioned.* The Qur'aan states: *No one besides Allah knows what is in the womb.* The Qur'aan does not refer here to sex; but it refers to how will the child

155 Zakir Naik is a Medical Doctor by profession

be when he/she grows up. Will he/she be honest or dishonest? Will he/she be a boon or bane for the society? Will he/she be an engineer or a doctor? And believe me with all the medical scientific knowledge, nobody can ever tell in advance what an unborn child will become. This is what is referred to here. Remember, if there is a difficulty in understanding the Arabic; refer to the Arabic lexicons, and the best one is by Lane, an Englishman who was a non-Muslim. Refer to Lane's lexicon, and he will tell you that sex is not mentioned in that verse of the Arabic text of the Qur'aan.

Refer to surah Kahf - chap 18: verses 74-82 for further explanation on this topic.

55. Question: WHY DO MUSLIMS REJECT THE CRUCIFIXION OF JESUS (PBUH)?

Answer: According to the Bible Jesus was never crucified. Proof from the Bible will be presented further on. As Muslims we accept the Qur'aan as the final Revelation and authority on the crucifixion. On the subject of the alleged crucifixion the Glorious Qur'aan states in *chap 4: 157-158*: " **That they (Jews) said (in boast): We killed Christ Jesus the son of Mary, the apostle of Allah**"; - **but they killed him not, but so it was made to appear to them, and those that differ therein are full of doubts; with no certain knowledge but only conjecture to follow, for of a surety they killed him not. Nay! Allah raised him up unto Himself; and Allah is Exalted in Power, Wise**". "And there is none of the People of the Book but must believe in him before his death; and on the day on the Day of Judgement he will be a witness against them." (*Chap 3: vs.55-56*) "Behold! ALLAH said: "O Jesus! I will take thee up and raise thee to Myself and clear thee (of the falsehoods) of those who blaspheme; I will make those who follow thee superior to those who reject faith to the day of Resurrection; then shall ye all return to ME, and I will judge between you of the matters wherein ye dispute. As to those that reject faith, I will punish them with a terrible agony in this world and in the Hereafter, nor will they have anyone to help."

Let us scrutinize from the Bible about the crucifixion: (1) the Gospels record that when Jesus (pbuh) was taken by the Roman soldiers, "*All the disciples left him and fled*". *Question:* If "all the disciples had fled" how is it that these very same disciples who had fled ran away and left Jesus in the lurch) and were not eyewitnesses could still record what happened and claim that Jesus (pbuh) 'died' on the cross?

Their claims have to be rejected, as they are baseless.

(2) *The Pharisees had asked for a sign from Jesus (pbuh) prior to the crucifixion:*

Matt 12:38 then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. Matt 12:39 But he answered and said unto them, an evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas: Matt 12:40 For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

The above is prior to his alleged crucifixion. *Jesus (pbuh) states categorically that the only sign he is giving is that of Jonah*. He did not refer to any of his previous miracles **'but the sign of Jonah'**. All Sunday school children know the story of Jonah and the fish: Jonah was thrown into the sea, a fish swallowed him and he was thrown out **ALIVE** from the belly of the fish after 3 days and 3 nights.

Questions: (1) Was Jesus (pbuh) alive or dead? Jesus had said: "as Jonah was"? Jonah was alive! So Jesus must have been alive! If the Church says he was dead then the first sign was not fulfilled!

(2) If the Church says that it was the time feature in the sign, meaning that it was 3 days and 3 nights: then here again the sign is not fulfilled. According to the Bible, Jesus (pbuh) was put on the cross¹⁵⁶ on Friday and before the sun rose on Sunday he was out of the Sepulture.

If we count Friday as the 1st day, and Saturday as the 2nd day; Friday night as 1st night, and Saturday night as the 2nd night, then here again it is only 2 days and 2 nights. So the sign given by Jesus (pbuh) according to the Bible is unfulfilled twice over. Remember this is the **ONLY SIGN** that Jesus (pbuh) gave according to the Bible, and if this claim is not fulfilled then the belief of the Doctrine of the Crucifixion of forgiveness of sin is bogus! Believe me, try as hard as they want to, the *'Paulines'*¹⁵⁷ with all their jugglery in trying to prove otherwise can never do it. **This proves this belief is really FICTION! SHAM!**

Let us read further from the Bible: Luke 22:42 Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless not my will¹⁵⁸, but

156 Some Christian's sects claim that it was a stake. Even that is unclear.

157 Why do we say Paulines? Because Paul made up this doctrine

158 **"Not my will but Thine"**: Here again Jesus (pbuh) is stating unequivocally that he is submitting to God's will, exactly as all the previous Prophets did including Prophet Muhammed (pbuh). John 5:30, 31- (Jesus said): **"I can do nothing of my own authority;**

thine, be done. Luke 22:43. And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven, strengthening him. Luke 22:44. And being in an agony he prayed more earnestly: and his sweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground.

James 5:16 - The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

Matt 7:7- Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: Matt 7:8 - For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. Matt 7:9. Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone? Matt 7:10 - Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? Matt 7:11 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him?

Matt 12:7 - But if ye had known what this meaneth I will have mercy, and not sacrifice; ye would not have condemned the guiltless. Matt 9:13 But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice:

Hebrews 5:7 - Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard¹⁵⁹ in that he feared;

Let us analyse the above statements from the Bible:

According to the Bible Jesus (pbuh) prayed for safety and sincerely cried for God's help. He had given examples of a father who will not disappoint his son if he asks for bread. He says that God answers the prayers of a righteous man. Further he says that he who knocks on the door of God will have his prayers answered. If a human father will grant what his son wants, then can anyone believe that God will not grant the prayers of His messenger? We all know that Jesus (pbuh) was an innocent person and a chosen one of God; yet the Church claims that God allowed him to be **murdered by crucifixion**.

John 19:32 - Then came the soldiers, and brake the legs of the first, and of the other which was crucified with him. John 19:33- But when they came to Jesus, and saw that he was dead already, they brake not his

as I hear, I judge; and my judgment is just, because I seek not my own will but the will of the one who has sent me". Anyone who seeks the will of God is a Muslim. Jesus (pbuh) was a Muslim as he sought God's will and not his own.

159 The word 'heard' in the Qur'aan (refer Chap 3 v 38)and even in the Bible means that the prayer was accepted. Jesus was saved , as the Qur'aan rightly states.

legs: John 19:34 - But one of the soldiers with a spear pierced his side, and forthwith came there out blood and water.

The soldiers did not break his legs. The only logical explanation for this is that they saw that he was still alive, and that is why they only pieced his side. The soldiers were old hands at this crucifixion game, and knew from past experience that it was too short a period of time for a person to die. Jesus was up there for about 6-9 hours¹⁶⁰ only. So they pierced his side and blood and water came out. Verification again that he was alive, as blood clots in a dead body and it would not have flowed. Let us go on to the next verses. **Jesus (pbuh) said TWICE that he wanted mercy from God and not to be condemned to die.** Can God be so callous that after his prayers and ‘great drops of tears as blood’ and earnestly beseeching God to save him, that God will not respond by helping him? Impossible! The answer is there; ***that an angel came down to comfort him, meaning that he was saved!***

Now let us read further:

Matt 27:46: And about the ninth hour Jesus (pbuh) cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? (My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?)

Jesus had said that God accepts a righteous man’s prayer so are we to believe that God abandoned him and Jesus (pbuh) had to cry so pitifully in desperation before his enemies? Let us read further:

John 20: 17: Jesus saith unto her, touch me not¹⁶¹; for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father; and to my God¹⁶², and your God.

Luke 24:35: Why seek ye the living among the dead? Luke 24:36: And as they thus spake, Jesus himself stood in the midst of them, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you. (Shalom) Luke 24: 37: But they were terrified and affrighted¹⁶³, and supposed that they had seen a spirit.

160 The Qur’aan refutes that Jesus was put on the cross, or that he was the crucified. Refer to Chap 4 v 157 of the Glorious Qur’aan. We are only using the Bible’s text to prove that Jesus was not dead but alive, even according to the Bible!

161 “Touch me not”. Why? The answer understood from the Bible is that he was still in pain and did not want anyone to touch him.

162 There is double emphasis here in this verse. That God is the Father of us and Jesus , and God is the God of Jesus and us. Can anything be more emphatic?

163 The reason they were afraid is because they were not present at the alleged crucifixion; **they had all run away like cowards**; they had heard that he had died, and

Luke 24: 38 - *And he said unto them, Why are ye troubled? and why do thoughts arise in your hearts?* Luke 24: 39: *Behold my hands and my feet, that it is I myself: handle me¹⁶⁴, and see; for a spirit hath not flesh and bones, as ye see me have.* Luke 24: 40: *And when he had thus spoken, he shewed them his hands and his feet.* Luke 24: 41 - *And while they yet believed not for joy, and wondered, he said unto them, Have ye here any meat?* Luke 24: 42: *And they gave him a piece of a broiled fish, and of an honeycomb.* Luke 24: 43 *And he took it, and did eat before them.* Luke 24:23 *And when they found not his body, they came, saying, that they had also seen a vision of angels, which said that he was alive.*

These verses from the Bible prove that Jesus was alive!

I repeat: Jesus was alive!

He never died on the cross, because only living people need and eat food and not a spiritualized person. A resurrected person is as unto angels as Jesus said in Luke 20:36 - *'Neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the angels; and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection'.*

The word alive comes up all the time. So this doctrine of the Church is definitely false!

There is another dimension to this **crucifixion** story. If, as the Church propounds the crucifixion was to atone for the sins through the blood of Jesus, then where does the Pope fit into the forgiveness theory?

*According to the Church the Pope saves from perdition*¹⁶⁵. *Does it mean that the crucifixion was incomplete in atoning for the sins?*

These are man made doctrines as Jesus predicted in: MATT 15:9 - **But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.** & MARK 7:7: **Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.**

56. Question: MUSLIMS CLAIM THAT THE QUR'AAN STATES PROPHETS MOSES (PBUH) AND JESUS (PBUH) FORETOLD THE COMING OF PROPHET MUHAMMED (PBUH) AND THAT

were under the impression that he was a spook. That is why Jesus says - why are thoughts arising in your minds? *All of you were not present so how come you believe something you did not witness? I am alive! Give me food to eat, as I am hungry.* And he took the fish and honeycomb and ate before them. He was ALIVE!

164 Jesus says: **Handle me.** Why? Because he proved to all of them that he is the very same person they knew previously and that he was alive!

165 *Perdition: "In Christian belief a state of eternal damnation into which a sinful person who has not repented passes after death". Oxford Dictionary-3rd edition: 2002*

IT IS STATED IN THE BIBLE¹⁶⁶. CAN YOU GIVE US AN INDICATION OF WHERE THIS IS STATED?

Answer: This is the very important question! If this question can be resolved, then there should be no problem for those who call themselves Christians to revert to the true religion of Allah as was taught by all the messengers / prophets of Allah. Let us be impartial and examine some of the evidence from the Bible that we can decipher using the Glorious Qur'aan. It must be stated frankly that the Church will never accept the proof no matter how authoritative because it will lose its power over the masses, as there is no papacy in Islam.

“And certainly We have made distinct in this Qur'aan for mankind every kind of description; and man is in most things contentious”.
Glorious Qur'aan chapter 18 verse 54.

BIBLE REFERENCES: John 1:20. And he confessed, and denied not; but confessed, **I am not the Christ.** John 1:21 And they asked him, what then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. **Art thou that prophet¹⁶⁷?** **And he answered, No.** John 1:23 He said, I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, **Make straight the way of the Lord,** as said the Prophet Esaias.

John 1:27 **He it is, who coming after me is preferred before me, whose shoe's latchet I am not worthy to unloose.** John 3:28 **Ye yourselves bear me witness, that I said, I am not the Christ, but that I am sent before him¹⁶⁸.**

166 There are many prophecies regarding the advent of the Holy Prophet both in the Old and the New Testament. The Torah and the Gospel are specially mentioned because Moses and Jesus were respectively the first and the last of the Israelite prophets. Deut. 18:15-18 speaks very clearly of the raising of a prophet (who shall be the like of Moses) from among the brethren of the Israelites, i.e. the Ishmaelites or the Arabs, while Deut. 33:2 speaks of the shining forth of the manifestation of the Lord, i.e. his coming in full glory “from Mount Paran”. The Gospel is full of the prophecies of the advent of the Holy Prophet; Matt. 21:33- 44, Mark 12:1-11, Luke 20:9 -18, where the Lord of the vineyard comes after the son (i.e. Jesus) is maltreated, and Matt. 13:31-32, John 1:21, John 14:16, John 14:26 all contain such prophecies.

167 ‘That Prophet’ refers to Deut 18:18. This Prophet was so well known that it was not even necessary to take his name as he was expected by the Children of Israel due to the many prophecies in the O. T. by Moses and Isaiah (pbuh). Muslims refer to Prophet Muhammed as Rasullulah, or Nabi of Allah, (Messenger of Allah) or Habibullah- (beloved of Allah) without even mentioning his name- because he is so well known to all Muslims that it is understood that these titles refer to Prophet Muhammed (pbuh).

168 John the Baptist was the contemporary of Jesus. So he is automatically excluded. Muslims say that it is Prophet Muhammed and all the Prophecies fit him perfectly!

Many more quotations from the Bible follow, but let me quote just two from the Glorious Qur'aan about the coming of Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) that was foretold by Jesus (pbuh):

Glorious Qur'aan: Chap 61: verses 6-7¹⁶⁹ **“And when Jesus son of Mary said: O’ Children of Israel! Lo! I am a messenger of ALLAH unto you, confirming that which was (revealed) before me in the Torah, and bringing good tidings of a messenger who cometh after me, whose name is Ahmed¹⁷⁰ Yet when he hath come with clear proofs, they said: this is mere magic. And who does greater wrong than he who invents a lie against ALLAH when he is summoned unto AL-ISLAM (to surrender one’s will to the will of Allah). And ALLAH guides not the wrongdoing folk”.**

Glorious Qur'aan: Chap3: verse 81 - **“Behold! Allah took the covenant of (all) the prophets, saying: “I give you a Book and wisdom; then comes to you an Apostle confirming what is with you; do ye believe him and render him help”. Allah said: “Do ye agree, and take this My Covenant as binding on you?” They said: “We agree”. Allah said: “Then bear witness, and I am with you among the witnesses”.**

Allah has preserved the foretelling of the coming of His final messenger Muhammed (pbuh) in the following verses of the Bible, even with all its corruption and interpolations.

Jeremiah 28:9: “The prophet which prophesied of peace, when the word of the prophet shall come to pass, then shall the prophet be known, that the Lord hath truly sent him.”

The word *Islam means submission to Allah* and also signifies tranquility and peace. Peace between the Creator and his creatures. The Prophet of Islam taught the Muslims to greet with the universal Islamic greeting of: **“As Salaamu Alaikum” which means: “Peace and blessings be upon you”.** This prophecy of Jeremiah cannot be applied to Jesus as Jesus himself stated in:

Luke 12:51-53: “Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you nay; but rather division: For from henceforth there will be five in one house divided, three against two and two against three. The father shall be divided against the son, and the son against the father; the mother against the daughter, and the daughter against the

169 Read also chapter 7 vs. 157-158 & chapter 5 vs. 45-47 of the Glorious Qur'aan

170 **Ahmed** is another name of Muhammed (pbuh) given to him by Allah. The name **Ahmed** means “one who praises Allah excessively”.

mother; the mother in law against her daughter in law, and the daughter in law against her mother in law.” (See also Matt 10:34-36)¹⁷¹

UNTIL SHILOH COMES

Genesis 49:1: *“And Jacob called unto his sons, and said, ‘Gather yourselves together, that I may tell you that which shall befall you in the last days.’”*

This corresponds with *Qur’aan Surah 2:v133*: *“Were you witnesses when death came to Jacob? When he said to his sons, “What will you worship after me?” They said, “We shall worship thy God (Allah), the God of thy fathers, Abraham, Ishmael and Isaac; One God, and to Him we have surrendered (in Islam).*

Genesis 49:10: *“The Sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver¹⁷² from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him shall the gathering of the people be.”* There are two very important words mentioned here. The first is “Shiloh” and the second “Sceptre”. ‘Shiloh’ is also the name of a town but its real meaning is peace, tranquility, and rest, i.e., Islam. It could never refer to a town here. If it referred to a person, it could be a corruption of ‘Shaluah’ (Elohim), i.e., Messenger (of Allah).

So the ‘Sceptre’, meaning the Israelite Prophethood in the lineage of Isaac would stop as soon as Shiloh comes.

The shift of Prophethood to another nation was foretold in *Jeremiah 31:36*: *“If those ordinances depart from before me, saith the Lord, then the seed of Israel also shall cease from being a nation before me for ever.”*

And also foretold by Jesus (pbuh) in *Matt 21:43*: *“Therefore say I unto you, the kingdom of God shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.”*

And without doubt that nation is the Arabs, as it is stated in Isaiah - 21-13- “The Burden Upon Arabia”. This corresponds to the following

¹⁷¹ *Interesting fact*: In Arabic the word ‘sword’ has twelve different words to describe it. However, not once is sword mentioned in the Glorious Qur’aan. Surprise for Christians: **the word ‘sword’ appears 448 times in 404 verses in the Bible. Check it out!**

¹⁷² Prophet Muhammed was given the Qur’aan which contains the Shariah (Law) of Islam as foretold in Genesis 49:1. Jesus said time and again that he came with no new Law, and he followed the Law of Moses. So this prophecy cannot apply to Jesus.

verse of the Glorious Qur'aan in which Allah informs the prophet of a very heavy responsibility to discharge!

“Soon shall We send down to you a weighty Message”. (Ch.73 v 5)

BAKKA IS MAKKAH.

The Holy Ka'bah was built by Abraham and his son Ishmael (pbut) in Makkah, and is mentioned in the Holy Qur'aan in *Surah 48:v24*. Another name for Makkah is Bakka, depending on the dialect of the tribe. The name “Bakka” is also mentioned in the Glorious Qur'aan in **Surah 3: verse 96: “Verily, the first House (of worship) appointed for mankind was that in Bakka¹⁷³ (Makkah), full of blessing and guidance for all people.”**

Marvelously, this word “**Bakka**” is preserved in the Bible and it was mentioned by Prophet David in *his Psalm 84:6: “Who passing through the valley of Bakka made it a well, the rain also filleth the pools.”* The water well mentioned here is the well-known well of “Zamzam,” which is still present close to the Kaaba in Makkah and still flows today with abundant water as it did for thousands of years. Ask any Muslim who goes to Makkah for pilgrimage.

THE HOUSE OF MY GLORY

Isaiah, chap 60:vs. 1- 22- It speaks about Prophet Muhammed (pbuh)

1. **“Arise, shine; for thy light is come, and the glory of the Lord is risen upon thee. For, behold, the darkness shall cover the earth, and gross darkness the people, but the Lord shall arise upon thee and His glory shall be seen upon thee”.**

Compare with Al-Qur'aan Chap 74:1-3: “O! Thou wrapped up in garments! Arise and warn! And your Lord magnify!

The advent of Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) was at a time of spiritual darkness when the world forgot the Oneness of God as taught by Prophets Abraham, Moses and Jesus (pbut) and all the previous prophets.

2. **“And the Gentiles shall come to thy light, and kings to the brightness of thy rising.” “Lift up thine eyes round about, and see; all they gather themselves together, they come to thee:” It is recorded in *Matt chap, 5, vs., 17 & 18*, as well as in *Matt 10:5*; ‘that Jesus**

173 **Makkah** is also called as **Bakka** in the Glorious Qur'aan in Chap v,96

had said “And go not unto the way of the Gentiles¹⁷⁴”. This corresponds with: *Chap 3: v. 49* of the Glorious Qur’aan which says: **“And appoint him (Jesus) an apostle to the Children of Israel...”** On the other hand it is a fact that the followers of Muhammed are from every nation on earth, as he came for the whole of humanity. Within less than twenty-three years the whole of Arabia was united and had accepted Islam, and started to go even beyond.

3. **“... Because the abundance of the sea shall be converted unto thee, the forces of the Gentiles shall come unto thee.”** Within less than a century Islam spread out of Arabia to other countries. From the Pyrenees of Spain to China and all the countries in between. Today Muslims inhabit every country on earth!
6. **“The multitude of camels¹⁷⁵ shall cover thee, the dromedaries of Midian and Ephah; all they from Sheba shall come, they shall bring gold and incense; and they shall shew forth the praises of the Lord.”** **“All the flocks of Kedar shall be gathered together unto thee, the rams of Nebaioth shall minister unto thee: they shall come up with acceptance on mine altar, and I will glorify the house of My glory.”** The tribes of Kedar in Arabia who were divided became united. **“The house of My glory”** referred to here is the House of Allah in Makkah, and not the Church of Christ or the Vatican as thought by Christian commentators.

Note: It mentions “HOUSE” in the singular. There is only one house that Muslims are duty-bound to visit at least once in a lifetime, and that is the house that Prophet Abraham built with his first born son Ismail in Makkah, i.e. “Kaaba”.

On the other hand the Christians have no such injunction in the Bible, that it is compulsory to visit the Vatican or any other Church. There was no Vatican and no churches in existence at the time of Jesus (pbuh). ***Jesus never prayed in a church as they did not exist in his time.*** The House of Allah, the Kaaba already existed during the time of Prophets Musa (Moses), Dawud (David), Esa (Jesus) and Muhammed, as Prophet Abraham and his son, Ishmael (pbut) had rebuilt it. It is a reality that Saudi Arabia is made up of the villages of Kedar, and is the only country in the world, which remains impregnable to any influence of the Church.

¹⁷⁴ Jesus never preached to any Gentile, and never ordered any disciple to do so. Check the Bible. Paul was the one that said –go and preach to the world.

¹⁷⁵ Camels are linked to Arabia. Even today camels are still used in Arabia

“Therefore thy gates shall be open continually; they shall not be shut day or night; that men may bring unto thee the forces of the Gentiles, and that their kings may be brought.”

This is very significant: The mosque surrounding the Holy Kaaba in Makkah has remained open day and night 24/7/365 days¹⁷⁶ since it was cleansed of idols by Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) more than 1,400 years ago. There is no place of worship in the whole world that remains open 24/7/365 except the Grand Mosque in Makkah. Rulers as well as subjects – **gentiles** - came for the Hajj-Pilgrimage. From the foregoing, one can definitely conclude that all of the above prophecies fit Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) perfectly.

The majority of Christians do not practice the teachings and the manner of praying of Jesus (pbuh). In the five daily obligatory prayers of Muslims, in congregation or individually, blessings are invoked on Prophet Abraham and his family countless number of times all over the world daily.

The majority of Muslims practice Islam daily in their lives all over the world. There is not an hour that the 5 times a day Salaah (the obligatory prayer) is not being performed in some part of the world as the set times due to the time zones in different parts of the world.

Amazing as it sounds, it is an established fact.

Have a look at a map of the world and you will find Indonesia on the eastern side of the earth. The major cities of Indonesia are Java, Sumatra, Borneo and Saibil. As soon as dawn breaks on the eastern side of Saibil, at approximately 5:30am local time, Fajar Aazaan (the prayer before dawn) begins.

Thousands of Muazzins in Indonesia begin reciting the Aazaan.

The process advances towards West Indonesia. One and a half hours after the Aazaan has been completed in Saibil, it echoes in Jakarta. Sumatra then follows suit and before this auspicious process of calling Aazaan ends in Indonesia, it has already begun in Malaysia.

Burma is next in line, and within an hour of its beginning in Jakarta, it reaches Dacca, the capital city of Bangladesh. After Bangladesh, it has already prevailed in western India, from Calcutta to Srinagar. It then advances towards Bombay and the environment of entire India resounds with this proclamation. Srinagar and Sialkot (a north city in Pakistan) have the same

176 Ask any Muslim who has been to Makkah for pilgrimage

timing for Aazaan. The time difference between Sialkot, Quetta, and Karachi is forty minutes, and within this time, Fajar Aazaan is heard throughout Pakistan. Before it ends there, it has already begun in Afghanistan and Muscat. The time difference between Muscat and Baghdad is one hour. Aazaan resounds during this one hour in the environments of Hijaaz-e-Muqaddas (Holy cities of Makkah and Madinah), Yemen, United Arab Emirates, Kuwait and Iraq.

The time difference between Baghdad and Alexandria in Egypt is again one hour. The Aazaan continues to resound in Syria, Egypt, Somalia and Sudan during this hour. The time difference between eastern and western Turkey is one and a half hours, and during this time it is echoed with the call to prayer.

Alexandria and Tripoli (capital of Libya) are located at one hour's difference. The process of calling Aazaan thus continues throughout the whole of Africa. Therefore, the proclamation of the "Tawheed" and "Risaalat" that had begun in Indonesia reaches the Eastern Shore of the Atlantic Ocean after nine and half hours. Prior to the Aazaan reaching the shores of the Atlantic, the process of "Zohar Aazaan" has already started in east Indonesia, and before it reaches Dacca, "A'SR Aazaan" has started. This has hardly reached Jakarta one and half hours later; the time of "Maghrib" becomes due, and no sooner has "Maghrib" time reached Sumatra, the time for calling "Isha Aazaan" has commenced in Saibil! When the Muazzins of Indonesia are calling out "Fajar Aazaan", the African Muazzins are calling the Aazaan for Isha.

If we were to ponder over this phenomenon thoughtfully, we would conclude the amazing fact that there is not even a single moment when thousands of Muazzins around the world are not reciting the Aazaan on the surface of this earth, and millions of Muslims are responding to this wonderful call to prayer. Even as you read this material right now, you can be sure there are at least thousands of people who are reciting and hearing the Aazaan!!!

CHARIOT OF ASSES AND CHARIOT OF CAMELS

The vision of Isaiah of the two riders in *Isaiah 21:7*: “*And he saw a chariot with a couple of horsemen, a chariot of asses, and a chariot of camels*”. Who was the rider upon an ass? Every Sunday school student will know that it was Jesus (pbuh) (*John 12:14*) - “*And Jesus, when he had found a young ass, sat thereon as it is written.*” *Who*

then is the promised rider on a camel? The Church is silent on this, for the reason that it can only be Prophet Muhammed (pbuh).

Camels were the chief means of transport during the time of the Prophet, and even today camels are associated with Arabia. If this is not applied to him, then the prophecy has yet to be fulfilled more than 2,000 years after Jesus (pbuh). **Isaiah 21:13** mentions- **“The burden upon Arabia”**- which means the responsibility of the Arab Muslims, and of course now of all Muslims, to spread the message of Islam.

Isaiah 21:14: “The inhabitants of the land of Tema brought water to him that was thirsty; they prevented with their bread him that fled.”

Tema in all probability is Madinah where Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) and his companions fled to, when the Quraish of Makkah wanted to kill them. The people of Madinah gave them food and shelter as is recorded in the Hadīths of the prophet.

Isaiah 21:15: “For they fled from the swords, from the drawn sword and from the bent bow, and from the grievousness of war.”

This was when Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) and his companions were persecuted so terribly that they fled from Makkah to Madina.

Isaiah 21:16: “For thus hath the Lord said unto me: within a year, according to the years of a hireling, and all the glory of Kedar shall fail.”

Exactly in the second year of Hijrah (migration) the pagans were defeated in the battle of Badr. *313 ill equipped Muslims under the leadership of the Prophet defeated more than 1,000 well-equipped Arabs from Makkah.*

Isaiah 21:9- “And, behold, here cometh a chariot of men, with a couple of horsemen. And he answered and said, Babylon is fallen, is fallen; and all the graven images of her gods he hath broken unto the ground”.

Babylon is in Iraq. This prophecy is also for the Prophet of Islam, as his companions went and passed the message to the people of Iraq and the idols there were also destroyed. There is no need to stretch one’s imagination to fit all these prophecies to Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) like the Church is trying dogmatically to do for Jesus (pbuh), when it in no way can be applied to him.

Isaiah 21:17 - “... the mighty men of the children of Kedar shall be diminished, for the Lord God of Israel hath spoken it.”

Kedar is the second son of Ishmael (**Genesis 25:13**) from whom ultimately Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) arose. In the beginning the

children of Kedar were attacking Muhammed (pbuh) and his companions. But as time went by many of them accepted Islam, and the number of children of Kedar who resisted diminished. In some Bible verses Kedar is synonymous with the Arabs as in:

Ezekiel 27:21 - "Arabia and all the Princes of Kedar..."

THE PROPHET LIKE UNTO MOSES (PBUH)

Deut 18:18-I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put my words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him.

Deut 18:19 And it shall come to pass, that whosoever will not hearken unto my words which he shall speak in my name, I will require it of him.

Deut 18:20 But the prophet, which shall presume to speak a word in my name, which I have not commanded him to speak, or that shall speak in the name of other gods, even that prophet shall die.

Now compare with the following verses of the Glorious Qur'aan regarding the "brethren" prophecy of Deut above:

Al-Qur'aan, chap 2, v, 129- "Our¹⁷⁷ Rabb! Send amongst them an Apostle of their own, who shall rehearse (convey, repeat) Thy signs to them and instruct them in Scripture (Book) and wisdom, and sanctify them: for Thou art the Exalted in Might, the Wise".

Allah answered the above prayer of Abraham in sending Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) as is stated in the Qur'aan:

Glorious Qur'aan Chap 3, v. 164- "Allah verily hath shown grace to the believers by sending unto them a messenger of their own who recites unto them His revelations..."

Glorious Qur'aan Chap73, v. 15 "Surely We have sent to you as a Messenger, a witness against you, as We sent a messenger (Moses) to Pharaoh".¹⁷⁸

Prophet Abraham - **first son**
Ismail¹⁷⁹- through - who
descended the Arab nation

Prophet Abraham - **second**
son Isaac through whom
descended the Israelite nation

177 This prayer was made by Prophet Ebrahim and his son, Prophet Ismail when they **RE-BUILT** the Kaaba (the first house of the worship on earth) in Makkah

178 The Holy Prophet's likeness to Moses (pbuh) is stated in the clearest terms in this verse , one of the earliest revelations, and thus the Holy Prophet's claim to be the promised prophet of Deut. 18:18, who is expressly stated to be the "like" of Moses (pbuh) , is as old as his Revelation. See more similarities on next page.

Jesus (pbuh) is definitely excluded, as he is an Israelite¹⁸⁰. The Bible states that his lineage is traced to David, and David was from the line of the Israelite tribes. *If that prophet were to come from the Israelites, then it would not have stated “a Prophet from among their brethren.”* This is a clear prophecy of Prophet Muhammed (pbuh).

The Qur’aan states that Jesus (pbuh) is from the Israelites. Muhammed (pbuh) is in many ways like unto Moses (pbuh). If this is not accepted, then this promise has yet to be fulfilled more than 2,000 years later and counting. The table below is self-explanatory as it compares a few crucial characteristics of Moses, Muhammed, and Jesus (pbut), which clarify the identity of **“that prophet”** who was to come after Moses (pbuh).

<u>Area of comparison</u>	<u>Moses (pbuh)</u>	<u>Muhammed (pbuh)</u>	<u>Jesus (pbuh)</u>
Birth	Normal	Normal	Unusual
Family Life.	Married with children.	Married with children.	Did not marry
Upbringing	Foster home- Pharaoh-King of Egypt	Foster home - Grandfather, who was the Chief of the Quraish Tribe	Brought up by his mother, Mary (pbuh) am
Death.	Usual.	Usual.	Lifted up bodily.
Career.	Prophet Statesman.	Prophet Statesman.	Prophet Only.
Forced emigration	To Median.	To Madinah.	Did not emigrate
Results of encounters.	Moral & Physical Victories.	Moral & Physical Victories.	Moral Victory only.
Status of Revelation.	Law engraved on Tablets in his lifetime-Lost - never found again	Al-Qur’aan was revealed to him written down in his lifetime.	Never authorized to be written down. Oral teachings - followed Law of Moses (pbuh)

179- **Ismail was the first son of Prophet Abraham from Hagar**, but the Jews and Christians have changed it to Ishaac. This is a fabrication. Sarah did not have *Ishaac until after Ismail was born. Ismail was about 13 years of age when Ishaac was born.*

180 It is very important to re-iterate that Prophet Jesus (pbuh) was from the Israelites, and was not a Jew. Refer to Mr. Ebrahim’s analysis from authentic Christian sources of where the Jewish nation began.

Acceptance of Leadership.	Rejected at first & then accepted in his lifetime by his own people.	Rejected at first & then accepted in his lifetime by his own people as well as <u>all nations</u>	The Children of Israel, his own People, rejected him, and even till today they reject him.
Nature of Teachings.	Spiritual & Legal. (Torah.)	Spiritual & Legal. (Al-Qur'aan)	Mainly spiritual. No new Law.

Deuteronomy 18:19: "And it shall come to pass that whosoever will not hearken unto my words which he shall speak in My name, I will require it of him."

Jesus (pbuh) had also said: '*the Spirit of truth*' shall not speak of himself but speak whatsoever he hears as is revealed to him in God's name. In the Qur'aan, 113 of the 114¹⁸¹ chaps begin with: "**In the name of Allah, Most Gracious, Most Merciful.**" And all Muslims always begin with this formula.

The Qur'aan is the "Word of Allah" as foretold in Deuteronomy. Christians begin with, "In the Name of the Father, the Son and the Holy Spirit". It is to be noted that those who will not hear him, and deny him, will be punished. In certain Bibles *Deuteronomy 18:19* states, "**I will be his avenger**"

This corresponds with *Holy Qur'aan: (Surah 3:19): "Truly the religion in the sight of Allah is Islam."*

(Surah 3:85): "And whoever desires a religion other than Islam, it will never be accepted of him, and in the Hereafter he will be one of the losers."

MY SERVANT, MESSENGER AND ELECT

A further fulfillment of the prophecy of Muhammed (pbuh) is found in *Isaiah Chap 42:verse1* onwards.

"Behold My servant, whom I uphold; Mine elect, in whom My soul delighteth; I have put My spirit upon him: he shall bring forth judgement¹⁸² to the Gentiles." Isaiah: 42-1-

181 Only Chap 9 does not begin with Bismillah- In the Name of Allah- this chap begins with a warning from Allah to the kuffar to adhere to a treaty they signed because they had unilaterally broken it, or face the consequences.

182 **The only prophet who has 'brought forth judgement' to the Gentiles is Prophet Muhammed (pbuh), as he is a universal messenger to Gentiles and non-Gentiles.**

Refer Qur'aan chap 7 v 158

The Prophet of Islam is known as “**Abduhu-wararusluh**”, which means “**the servant of Allah**”. Any person entering the fold of Islam reads sincerely the shahadah saying: “I bear witness that there is no one worthy of worship except Allah, and I bear witness that **Muhammed (pbuh)** is the **servant** and **messenger** of Allah”. The hadith books abound with the word “**O Messenger of Allah**” when the companions of the Prophet addressed him. The word **elect in Arabic is “Mustapha**”. This is also a title of Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) as he was known as “**Al Mustapha**”. Muslims use the term **Hazrat Muhammed (pbuh) Mustapha** when speaking about him as a mark of respect.

Isaiah 42:21 - The LORD is well pleased for his righteousness' sake; he will magnify the law, and make it honourable.

(Al-Qur'ân 21:107) “And We have not sent thee but as a mercy to the nations.” (Al-Qur'ân 34:28) “And We have not sent thee but as a bearer of good news and as a warner to all mankind, but most men know not.”

He is the only Prophet after Jesus (pbuh) that brought a universal Law for the whole of humanity in more than 2,000 years, which is still perfectly intact and applicable for all time. There are many verses in the Glorious Qur'aan in which the Almighty praises the Prophet for his etiquette and character.

No doubt all Prophets were indeed servants, messengers and elect of Allah. Yet no Prophet is universally called by these specific titles as Muhammed (pbuh). “**Abduhu wa Rasuluh Mustapha,**” i.e. **His slave servant and His elected messenger**. This same formula is repeated five times a day from the minarets of each and every mosque in the whole world as a call for prayers, another five times daily, immediately before the beginning of each prayer, nine times a day in the “Tashah-hud¹⁸³” during the five obligatory prayers and several more times if a Muslim performs additional recommended prayers. In other words, this formula is repeated dozens of time daily by each Muslim throughout the world. **The most common title of Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) is “Rasullullah” i.e. the messenger of Allah**. Thereafter blessings are invoked on Prophet Abraham as well in every prayer, obligatory and optional.

1. **“He shall not cry, nor lift up, nor cause his voice to be heard**

183 The witnessing of the Unity of Allah and the messengership of the Prophet Muhammed (pbuh)

in the street.” This describes the high honorable character, dignity and decorum of Prophet Muhammed (pbuh).

2. **“. . . He shall bring forth judgment unto truth.”** He chastised the Jews for making God into a (national) Jewish God. And he chastised the Christians for dividing God into three, and in elevating Jesus (pbuh) to be son of God.

3. **“He shall not fail nor be discouraged, till he has set judgment in the earth: and the isles shall wait for his law.”** The trials and tribulations of Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) are well documented. No Prophet suffered as much in contrast to him in establishing the worship of One God. Compare with Jesus (pbuh), who did not prevail over his enemies and was rejected by his own people.

4. **“ I, the Lord have called thee in righteousness, and will hold thine hand, and will keep thee¹⁸⁴, and give thee for a covenant of the people, for a light of the Gentiles.”** In a short time many Gentiles and Jews living in Madina accepted Islam. His Hadīths are preserved and are completely separate from the Qur’aan.

5. **“To open the blind eyes, to bring out the prisoners from the prison, and them that sit in darkness out of the prison house.”** “Blind eyes, life of darkness” denotes here the pagan life of servitude to idols and men. “Bring out the prisoners from the prison” denotes the abolishment of slavery for the first time in the history of mankind by the Prophet of Islam.

6. **“I am the Lord, that is My name, and My glory will I not give to another, neither My praise to graven images.”** The Prophet of Islam destroyed 360 idols that were in the Ka’bah when he conquered Makkah without any fighting. Never in the annals of history has a city been conquered without a drop of blood being shed, except Makkah by the Holy Prophet. The same inhabitants persecuted the Prophet beyond measure in the same city, but he took no revenge. He forgave each one of his enemies and said that there is no reproach ‘this day whatsoever on his enemies’. Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) is unique among all Prophets as he is the “Seal

184 - This promise of ‘keep thee, and hold thine hand’ - means to protect the Prophet is stated in the *Glorious Qur’aan in chap 5, verse 67*: “O Messenger *, deliver that which has been revealed to thee from thy Rabb; and if thou do (it) not, thou hast not delivered HIS message. And ALLAH will protect thee from men. Surely ALLAH guides not the disbelieving people”. * Note: Allah addresses the prophet as Messenger as stated in *Isaiah Chap 42*. Also in the *Glorious Qur’aan in chapter 18v 27*:

“And recite that which has been revealed to thee of the Book of thy Lord...”

of all Prophets" and his teachings remain undistorted till today. Not so the scriptures of Christianity and Judaism or of any other religion!

7. **"Sing unto the Lord a new song and his praise from the end of the earth."** A **new song** means in a new language and cannot be Hebrew or Aramaic. **It can only be Arabic.** The praise of God and His messenger Muhammed (pbuh) is chanted five times daily from the minarets of thousands of mosques all around the world. i.e. The ends of the earth.

8. **"Let the wilderness and the cities thereof lift up their voice, the villages that Kedar doth inhabit: let the inhabitants of the rock sing, let them shout from the top of the mountains."** From Mount Arafat near Makkah, the Pilgrims chant every year the following: **"Here I am (for Your service) O' Allah. Here I am. You have no partner. Here I am. Verily Yours is the praise, the blessings and sovereignty. There is no God besides You."** Isaiah 42 can never be applied to an Israelite Prophet, as Kedar is the second son of Ishmael. (See Genesis 25:13)

9. **"Let them give glory unto the Lord, and declare his praise in the islands."** Islam spread to the small islands as far as Indonesia and the Caribbean.

10. **"He shall prevail against his enemies."** In a short period of only 23 years, the Kingdom of God on earth was established with the advent of Muhammed (pbuh) and he prevailed over his enemies. This 42nd chap of Isaiah fits perfectly and precisely to the character of Prophet Muhammad (pbuh).

KING DAVID CALLED HIM "MY LORD"

Psalm 110:1: "The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou at My right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool."

Mentioned here are two Lords. If the first Lord (the speaker) is God, then the second Lord, the one spoken to, could not be God also, as David knew only One God. So it should have read: **"God said unto my Lord"**.

Question: Who did David call "my Lord"? The Church would say Jesus (pbuh). ***But this had been denied by Jesus (pbuh) himself in Matt 22:45, Mark 12:37 & Luke 20:44.*** He excluded himself from this title, as he

was a son of David¹⁸⁵. *Jesus (pbuh) said that how could David call him "my Lord" if he was his son.* So again the Church has no answer. And David himself said in the book of Psalms, "The Lord said unto my Lord, sit thou on My right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool." David therefore called him Lord. Otherwise David would have said: "My Lord said unto my son"- as the genealogy traced in the Bible of Jesus (pbuh) is from David (pbut).

Jesus (pbuh) must have given an answer not recorded in the four canonical Gospels, but is mentioned explicitly in the Gospel of Barnabas that the promise was made in Ishmael, and not in Isaac (pbut). David's Lord was thus Muhammed (pbuh) whom he saw in spirit. No Prophet ever accomplished more than Muhammed (pbuh) in establishing the worship of the ONE GOD on this earth. Even the work of all other Prophets combined cannot be compared with what Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) achieved within a short period of 23 years. It is unrivalled in the history of this world as is stated in the 'Encyclopedia Britannica, "*that the most successful Prophet of all time is Prophet Muhammed (pbuh).*"

It is also very important to note here that each and every Prophet from Adam to Muhammed, including Moses & Jesus (pbut) worshiped only One God.

ART THOU THAT PROPHET?

The Jews sent priests and Levites to John the Baptist to inquire from him as to who he really was. (*John 1:20-21*) "*And he (John the Baptist) confessed and denied not; but confessed, "I am not the Christ." And they asked him, "What then?" "Art thou Elias?" And he saith, "I am not." "Art thou that prophet?" And he answered, "No."*

The crucial question here is: "Art thou that prophet?" Who then was this long-awaited Prophet after the advent of Jesus (pbuh) and John the Baptist who was so well known, that it was not even necessary to mention his name? Was he not the one like unto Moses (pbut) as mentioned in Deuteronomy 18:18?

The answer is that it could only be Muhammed (pbuh). Every prophecy as mentioned above fits Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) perfectly, as they all are exclusively meant for him alone!

185 Denoting from the lineage of David - not that David is his father

It is Paul and the Church that is misguiding the people. *Papacy is a creation of Paul*. Jesus (pbuh) never taught anything about a Pope. He prayed in the Temple of Solomon and never established a church.

BAPTIZING WITH THE HOLY GHOST AND WITH FIRE

Matt 3:11: "I, (John the Baptist) indeed baptize you with water unto repentance; but he that cometh after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear, he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with fire."

If Jesus (pbuh) was referred to here then John the Baptist would not have gone back to live in the jungle again, but to cling to Jesus (pbuh) and be one of his disciples. He did not do so because he knew that another powerful Prophet is alluded to, and not Jesus (pbuh). John the Baptist and Jesus (pbut) were contemporaries and had met many times and spoken to each other, as well as he had baptized¹⁸⁶ Jesus (pbuh) according to the Bible. So again it proves that it could not be Jesus (pbuh). It could only be Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) who was alluded to by John the Baptist (pbut).

"(Our religion of Islam is) the Baptism (Sibgatullah) of Allah: And who can baptize better than Allah! And it is He Whom we worship".
(Al-Qur'aan chap, 2 v, 138)

THE LEAST IN THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN

Jesus is quoted as saying in **Matt 11:11**: *"Verily I say unto you, among them that are born of women there hath not risen a greater one than John the Baptist, notwithstanding he that is least in the kingdom of heaven, is greater than he."*

Jesus (pbuh) is saying that John the Baptist is greater than Adam, Noah, Abraham, Moses (pbut), David and many other Prophets. *Questions*: How many pagans had John the Baptist converted? How many followers did he have? What were his main achievements?

The point here is: who is the least in the kingdom of heaven, but is greater than John the Baptist?

The kingdom of heaven was not yet established at that time so it could not have been Jesus (pbuh), and he never claimed to be the least, i.e. the youngest or the last prophet. The kingdom of heaven consists of God as the Supreme Being and all Prophets.

186 References: Matt. 3:16; Matt. 3:13; Mark 1:9

Muslims say the least or youngest one is Prophet Muhammed (pbuh), the last and final Prophet. No person since Jesus (pbuh), in more than 2,000 years has claimed to be a prophet with divine revelation, except Prophet Muhammed (pbuh). Furthermore, the respect and reverence that the Qur'aan bestows on Jesus (pbuh) is far superior to that of the Bible. Jesus (pbuh) said: "He shall receive of mine and glorify me". (Read Qur'aan chaps 3, 4, 19)

BLESSED ARE THE PEACEMAKERS

In his sermon on the mount, Jesus (pbuh) is quoted as saying (*Matt 5:9*) "**Blessed are the peacemakers: for they shall be called the children of God.**"

The greeting of a Muslim irrespective of nation or tribe is-'As Salaamu Alaikum', which means - 'may peace and blessings be upon you'. Arabic is a new language to all the non-Arab peoples as foretold in Isaiah chap 42, as well as the difference of language spoken by the previous prophets from the lineage of Isaac (pbuh).

In other words Muslims are 'the children of God'¹⁸⁷ according to the Bible, Matt 5:9 as we spread peace even in our greeting.

Islam means 'Surrender to the will of Allah' and also 'Peace': peace between the Creator and His best creation¹⁸⁸. Jesus (pbuh) could not mean his mission as a peacemaker as he said in *Matt 10:34-36*: "**Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword. For I am come to set a man at variance against his father, and the daughter against her mother, and the daughter in law against her mother in law. And a man's foes shall be they of his own household.**" (See also *Luke 12:49-53*)

Kingdom of Heaven means the establishing of Islam on earth, which is the name given by Allah for His religion. The Qur'aan states in the final precept of revelation at the time of the farewell pilgrimage of the Prophet: "***This day have I (Allah) perfected for you your religion, and chosen Islam ...***"

COMFORTER

John 14:16: "**And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever.**"

187 This verse is metaphorical and not literal

188- *Qur'aan-Chap 95: vs. 4 to 6* -"Certainly We created man in the best make. Then We render him the lowest of the low, Except those who believe and do good; so theirs is a reward never to be cut off".

We do not know exactly the original Aramaic word used by Jesus (pbuh) for Comforter. English Bibles use Consoler, Advocate, Helper, and in the Greek Bibles the word Paraclete is used. The Church and Priests gives different explanations for it: Holy Spirit, the Word, etc.

The Holy Qur'aan in *Surah 61:6* mentions that Jesus (pbuh) explicitly mentions "**Ahmed**", "**And (remember) when Jesus Son of Mary said: 'O' children of Israel! I am the Apostle of Allah (sent) to you confirming the Torah (which came) before me, and giving glad tidings of an Apostle to come after me, whose name shall be Ahmed... (I.e. another name of Prophet Muhammed).**"

Whatever the explanation is of the Comforter, we can conclude that Jesus (pbuh) left unfinished work and that someone was coming to complete his mission. Let us decipher from the Bible if this Comforter fits the personality of Prophet Muhammed (pbuh).

1. "Another Comforter": So many Comforters (prophets) had come and another one was yet to come.

2. "That he may abide with you for ever": i.e. there was no need for another one to come after him, as he was the Seal of all Prophets. The teaching i.e. The Glorious Qur'aan, will abide forever, and will remain intact, without any changes or interpolations. It is a proven fact that the Holy Qur'aan remains as pure as it was revealed 1,400 years ago. *Surah Al Hijr, chap 15 verse 9: "We have, without doubt, sent down the Message; and We will assuredly guard it (from corruption)."*

3. "He will reprove the world of sin" (**John 16:8**): All Prophets: e.g. Abraham, Moses (pbuh), Jesus (pbuh) chastised their own people for sin, but not the whole world as Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) did. He not only rooted out idolatry in Arabia within a 23-year period, but also sent envoys to Heraclius, the Sovereigns of Persia and Rome, to Najashi, the King of Ethiopia and to Muqauqis, the Governor of Egypt. Copies of his letters to these rulers are preserved in the Topkapi Museum, Istanbul in Turkey even today. Photos of these letters are in the Book mentioned previously.

He reprimanded the Christians for changing the Unity of God into a trinity, for having raised Jesus (pbuh) to Son of God, and God Himself. He condemned the Jews and Christians for having corrupted their Scriptures, reinstated the birthright of Ishmael, and cleared the Prophets from accusations of adultery, incest, rape and idolatry.

4. **“The prince of the world is judged” (John 16:11).** This is satan as explained in John 12:31 and 14:30. It is clear that Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) came to chastise the entire world on account of sin and deviation from the worship of One God.

5. **“The Spirit of Truth” (John 16:13).** “...he will guide you unto all truth... For he shall not speak of himself, but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak”

Since childhood, Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) was called **Al-Ameen**, i.e. the Honest and Truthful One.

6. **“And he will show you things to come” (John 16:13).** All the prophecies of Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) came to pass.

7. **“He shall glorify me” (John 16:14).** It is a reality that the Holy Qur’aan and Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) & Muslims have more reverence for Jesus (pbuh) than the Bible and Christians themselves. The following will clarify: to believe in his death on the cross discredits his Prophethood. The Qur’aan explicitly orders the Muslims to believe in his **MIRACULOUS BIRTH AND HIS MOTHER, MARY’S (PBUH)¹⁸⁹ INNOCENCE OF THE FALSE CHARGES OF THE JEWS.**

The Holy Qur’aan is verbatim God’s word. The angel Gabriel read it to Muhammed (pbuh), who memorized it, and he authorized his scribes to write it down in his presence¹⁹⁰.

Compare with **Deuteronomy 18:18:** “... and will put *My words* in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him.”

This corresponds with the **Holy Qur’aan: Surah 53:2-4:** “Your companion (Muhammed) is neither astray nor being misled. *Nor does he speak of (his own) desire. It is only the inspiration that is inspired.*”

According to **Deuteronomy 13:5:** “And that prophet, or that dreamer of dreams, shall be put to death...” It also stamps Jesus (pbuh) as accursed (ALLAH forbid) according to **Deuteronomy 21:22-23:** “... for he that is hanged is accursed of God ... **Matt 27:46:** “... My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?”

Is this not an insult to Jesus (pbuh) in not having faith in ALLAH?

189 Chap 19 of the Qur’aan is named “Maryam” after the mother of Jesus (pbut)

190 Not a single word from Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) or his companions is included in the Glorious Qur’aan. The Prophet’s sayings and teachings are recorded completely separately. These are called Hadiths.

REVELATION TO PROPHET MUHAMMED (PBUH)

The first revelation of the Qur'aan is in **Surah 96:v.1**. It was revealed through the angel Gabriel to Muhammed (pbuh) was the word "Iqra" in Arabic, which means: "Read" or "Proclaim". As he was unlearned (could not read nor write) he replied: "I cannot read."

This first revelation was prophesied in *Isaiah 29:12*: "**And the book is delivered to him that is not learned, saying, "Read this, I pray thee" and he saith, "I am not learned."** Exactly as stated in Isaiah 29:12!

The order of the revelations is not in the order it is seen in the Qur'aan. In other words the first part revealed is not in the first page and the last part revealed is not in the last page. That these revelations came piecemeal bit by bit, here a little and there a little and inserted in certain order in the Qur'aan as ordained by Allah, is also mentioned in *Isaiah 28:10-11*:

"For precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little¹⁸⁶; For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to his people."

The above prophecies fit Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) perfectly. The Qur'aan was revealed "precept upon precept" over 23 years exactly as prophesied above. Another tongue means refers to Arabic and not to Aramaic, which Jesus (pbuh) spoke. (*Refer Matt: 15-9*)

Muslims all over the world use one language only, which is Arabic, in calling upon their God in their worship, prayers, during pilgrimage and in their greetings to each other. This unity of language had been prophesied in Zephaniah 3:9:

"For then will I turn to the people a pure language that they may all call upon the name of the Lord, to serve him with one consent."

The above prophecy about the ONENESS OF LANGUAGE is very noteworthy! *Only Islam has this uniqueness about using one language in calling upon Allah, the Rabb of the Alamien*. The name of God is Allah, which is a pure word, which cannot be corrupted - every person, be it a German, Bosnian, Chinese, Indian, American, Turk or of any nation, who is a Muslim, calls upon Allah only in Arabic. It is all so understandable! Alas the Truth has come in Arabic,

186: Corresponds to Qur'aan- *Chapter 17. v. 106*: "**And it is a Qur'aan We have made distinct, so that thou mayest read it to the people by slow degrees, and We have revealed it in portions"**. 'Another tongue' means a different language to that of previous revealed scriptures.

but some still expect Prophet Jesus (pbuh), to teach mankind to worship Allah in another language in his second coming.

We Muslims are sure that Prophet Jesus (pbuh) in his second coming will join the Muslims in their mosques to pray to Allah. He is a Muslim, one who submits his will to the will of Allah, circumcised, shunning the eating of pork, and abstaining from alcohol and performing prayers with ablution, standing, bowing and prostrating as he did in the Temple of Solomon and in the Garden of Gethsemane; exactly as the Muslims pray in their homes and mosques!

It can by no means be a church as it contains “Graven Images¹⁹²” and has photos, paintings of cherubim and crosses, and Jesus (pbuh) never prayed in such a place.

All the prophecies mentioned above fits absolutely to Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) without any ambiguity and word gymnastics like the Christians try to do to make these prophecies fit Jesus (pbuh) ¹⁹³.

57. Question: WHAT DO MUSLIMS BELIEVE IN AND HOW CAN SOMEONE BECOME MUSLIM?

Answer: Muslims believe in a chain of Prophets starting with Adam, and includes, (*amongst thousands of others*) Noah, Abraham, Ishmael, Isaac, Jacob, Joseph, Job, Moses, Aaron, David, Solomon, Elias, Jonah, John the Baptist, Jesus and ending with the seal of Prophethood in Prophet Muhammed, peace be upon them all.

God’s final message to man, the Glorious Qur’aan, is a reconfirmation of the eternal message, which was revealed to the Prophet Muhammad through Angel Gabriel. Muslims believe in One Unique Incomparable God; in the Angels created by Him; in all the Prophets through whom His revelations were brought to mankind; in the Day of Judgment and individual accountability for actions; in God’s complete authority of human destiny and in life after death.

If anyone has a real desire to be a Muslim, then, one should pronounce the “Shahadah”, i.e. the testimony of faith. This is simply by saying in Arabic;

192 There are more than 24 verses in the Bible condemning ‘graven images’ yet the Church condones these graven images in the churches.

193 Muslims love and revere Prophet Jesus, but do not accept that the Isaiah: 21.v.13 - “The Burden Upon Arabia” can be applied to Jesus (pbuh) as Jesus was not from Arabia. The Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) was from Arabia.

“Ash-hadu al’laa ilaha illal’lah, Wa ash-hadu anna Muhamma’dar rasulul’lah” which means: “I bear witness that there is no deity (to be worshipped) except Allah, and I bear witness that Muhammed (pbuh) is the messenger of Allah”.

By this declaration the believer announces his or her faith in all of God’s Messengers and the scriptures they brought. The significant point which every Muslim must know very well is that there is no God (deity) to be worshipped other than Allah. He - Glory be to Him - is the only true God, Who alone deserves to be worshipped, since He is the Giver of life and Sustainer and Nourisher of mankind, and all creation with His unlimited bounties. Man must worship Allah, Who alone is worthy of worship. The second part of the Shahada means that Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) is the servant and chosen messenger of Allah. The Muslim has to obey the commands of the Prophet, and practice his teachings, for all the teachings of the Prophet were in fact revelations and inspirations conveyed to him by Allah.

The Glorious Qur’aan says in Chap 3, verse 84 & 85:

Say-“We believe in Allah, and what has been revealed to us and what has been revealed to Ebrahim, Ismail, Ishaac, Jacob, and the Tribes, and in (the books) given to Moses, Jesus, and the Prophets, from their Lord: we make no distinction between one and another among them, and to Allah do we bow our will (in Islam). If anyone desires a religion other than Islam (submission to Allah), never will it be accepted of him; and in the hereafter he will be in the ranks of those who have lost!

It is important for Christians to recognize that when Muslims criticize some of the doctrines of Christianity, they are not attacking Jesus (pbuh). Church doctrines such as ‘Trinity’ and ‘Atonement’ are criticized by Muslims because Jesus (pbuh) never taught them. These are man made doctrines as stated by Jesus (pbuh) in -

MATT 15:9: But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. MARK 7:7: Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

All the prophecies mentioned above fits perfectly to Prophet Muhammed without any ambiguity and word gymnastics like the Christians try to do to make these prophecies fit Jesus.

CHAPTER THREE

COMMON QUESTIONS ASKED BY HINDUS ABOUT ISLAM:

58. Question: IS NOT HINDUISM THE OLDEST & BEST RELIGION?

Answer: 1. It is Islam, which are the first and the oldest of all religions. People have a misconception that Islam is 1,400 years old and that Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) is the founder of this religion. Islam existed since time immemorial, ever since man first set foot on this earth. Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) is not the founder of Islam. He was the last and final Messenger of Almighty God.

2. This name Islam means ‘**submission to the Rabb of the Alameen**’ (Creator of mankind, jinn, angels and everything that exists). The first man, *Adam bowed his will to the will of Allah, so the religion of submission, which is Islam, was established since the time of the first man on earth.* However, the name of Islam could not be applied until the revelation of the Glorious Qur’aan in which the Laws pertaining to the existence of man on earth reached its perfection, (completion) as stated in chap 5, verse 4 of the Glorious Qur’aan.

The names of all other religions are named after a person or place, so in reality it means that whoever follows those religions is in fact following those people or place and not the Creator whose religion has to be named by Him or known by His name.

Examples: Hinduism¹⁹⁴ is named after the Indus valley or river, so in reality those living in that geographic area and no other can only follow this religion. Judaism is named after Judah. So in other words the people who lived during the time of Judah could only follow him while he was alive on this earth. When he died ‘his religion’ came to an end. So those who claim to follow him cannot do so as he is no longer here on earth to be followed.

Christianity is named after Jesus (pbuh). He also is no longer on this earth, and while he was on this earth he declared time and again that he followed the Law of Moses (pbuh). So how can one say that he is following Christianity when Jesus (pbuh) followed the Law of Moses (pbuh), and exhorted his followers also to follow the Law of Moses

¹⁹⁴ According to the learned scholars of Hinduism, the correct name should be ‘Vedantists’ as the Hindu scriptures are the ‘Vedas’

(pbuh)? Zoroastrianism is named after Zoroaster, and Buddhism is named after Buddha, and so on.

A religion of God has to be named by Him alone, as He would never allow a name of any person or place to be the name of His religion¹⁹⁵. Furthermore, God's religion is for all time and all places, so it has to have a perfect universal name. The only perfect name for God's religion is **Islam**, which means Peace and Submission to Him alone! Also, one of the attributes of Allah is The Giver of Peace and Security. And peace is the essence Islam as it establishes this peace between the Creator and created. Prophet Abraham (pbuh) who is recognised as the progenitor of the Bani Israel and the Arabs is mentioned in many verses of the Qur'aan. Remember he lived thousands of years before Prophets Moses, Jesus and Muhammed (pbut). But the Qur'aan bears witness to his belief in One God and his submission to Allah, alone which translates into him being called as a Muslim! So in other words Islam is there right through the ages from Adam through Muhammed (pbut).

“Abraham was neither a Jew nor a Christian, but he was (an) upright (man), a Muslim; and he was not one of the polytheists. The nearest of people to Abraham are surely those who follow him and this Prophet¹⁹⁶ and those who believe. And Allah is the Friend of the believers”. *Glorious Qur'aan Chapter 3 vs. 67 &68:*

3. For religion to be pure as revealed from God and to be authentic it should not have interpolations and revisions in its scriptures.

Moreover the religion's source of inspiration and direction should be Almighty God. The Qur'aan is the only religious scripture on the face of the earth which is in its original revealed language; Arabic. All the other religious scriptures have interpolations, additions, deletions and revisions. In other words they have been corrupted and the real message has been lost. The Qur'aan has been **memorized by** millions of people in its original form ever since its revelation, and even today there are millions of people who have memorized it's every letter. Moreover, if you compare the copies made by Caliph Uthman from the original Qur'aan that is yet present in the museum in Tashkent (Uzbekistan) and in the Topkapi museum (Turkey), they are the same as the ones we possess today. Allah (swt) promised in the Qur'aan, in

195 Religion means following rituals. **Islam is a complete way of life & not a religion.** Every facet of a Muslim's life is governed by the Qur'aan.

196 Refers to Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) as the Qur'aan is revealed to him

Surah Al Hijr, chap 15 verse 9: "We have, without doubt, sent down the Message; and We will assuredly guard it (from corruption)."

4. For a religion to be considered the best, it should have the solution to all the problems of mankind. It should be the religion of truth, and should be applicable to all ages. Islam is the only religion that has the solution to all the problems of mankind. E.g. the problems of alcoholism, surplus women, rape, robbery, racism, murder etc.

Islam is the religion of truth, and its laws and solutions are applicable to all the ages as truth never changes. The Qur'aan is the only religious book on the face of the earth, which has maintained its purity, authenticity and relevancy proving it to be the Word of God at all times and climes, including the present age of science and technology. Moreover, Islam is not a man-made religion, but a religion revealed and inspired by Almighty God. It is the only religion acceptable in His sight as stated in chap 3, v 85, and in other verses of the Glorious Qur'aan.

59. Question: IF "ALLAH" IS THE CORRECT NAME FOR GOD AS IS STATED IN THE QUR'AAN, THEN IS "ALLAH" MENTIONED IN OTHER RELIGIOUS SCRIPTURES BESIDES THE QUR'AAN?

Answer: Almost all the major religious scriptures of the world contain the word "Allah" as one of the names of God. In the Encyclopedia Britannica, 1990 Edition, vol.1, and pg. 276 – it says, *“Allah is the standard Arabic word used by Muslims as well as by Christians.”* **The word ALLAH appears about 7,000 times in the Hebrew Bible.**

a. “Elohim El, Elah, Alah”

In the Bible, God is very often referred to as ‘Elohim’ in the Hebrew language. The ‘im’ in the ending is a plural of honour and respect. God is referred to as ‘El’ or ‘Elah’ in the English Bible edited by Reverend C. I. Scofield. ‘Elah’ is alternatively spelled as ‘Alah’. The difference in spelling is only of a single ‘L’. Muslims spell Allah as ‘Allah’ while the Reverend has spelled it as ‘Alah’, and they pronounce it as ‘Elah’. Muslims pronounce it as Allah. Hebrew and Arabic are sister languages therefore we say it should be pronounced as ‘Allah’ and not as ‘Elah’.

Exodus 3:13&15/Psalm 50:1&2¹⁹⁷- In the Hebrew it is written ALLAH.

197 Refer to: Consonantal Hebrew Text as well as in both the Ancient Consonantal & Masoretic Text (cp Codex Vaticanus # 1209)

Language is a medium of expressing thoughts. However, the pronunciation should conform to the dictates of that particular language. A few examples of the English language with the pronunciations:

<i>Word</i>	<i>Pronunciation</i>	<i>Word</i>	<i>Pronunciation</i>
Phone	Fone	Photo	Foto
Knife	nife	Quay	Key
Write	rite	Psalms	saams

Similarly 'pint' and 'mint' are pronounced differently. If a non English person asks "Why?" The answer is: "because it is their language, and they know the correct pronunciation". Similarly the right pronunciation for A, L, L, A, H, is **Allah**, as is pronounced by Muslims.

b. Jesus cried out 'Allah! Allah!' when he was put on the cross¹⁹⁸: It is mentioned in the New Testament in the Gospel of Mathew, chap 27 verse 46 as well as Gospel of Mark, chap 15 verse 34 that when Jesus (pbuh) was put on the cross / stake he cried with a loud voice saying "E'Li, E'Li, la'-ma sa-bach'-tha-ni?" meaning 'My God, My God why hast Thou Forsaken Me?' It does not sound at all like Jehovah! Jehovah! Why have thou forsaken me? The answer is that Hebrew and Arabic are sister languages, and if you translate "E'Li, E'Li la'-ma sa-bach'-tha-ni" into Arabic; it is 'Allah Allah lama tarak tani'- it sounds similar as one can see. This statement of Jesus (pbuh), "E'Li, E'Li la'-ma sa-bach'-tha-ni" is preserved in its original in each and every Bible translation which is available in more than 2,000 different languages of the world, and in each and every of them "Allah" is preserved in them.

"Allah" in Sikhism.

One of the names Gurunanak Sahib referred to God is "Allah".

"Allah" in Rigveda Book 2 Hymn I verse II:

Even in the Rigveda which is the most sacred scripture of the Hindus, one of the attributes mentioned in Book no. 2 Hymn no. I verse II, is 'Ila' which if pronounced properly is the same as Allah.

198 We are using quotations from the Bible as reference. The Qur'aan rejects that Jesus (pbuh) was ever put on the cross or stake or whatever. The Qur'aan states he was saved from the snares of the Jews by being raised up alive by Allah.

Allo-Upanishad:

Amongst the various Upanishads, one is named as 'Allo' Upanishad in which God is referred to as "Allah" several times.

It would be appropriate to mention here that in the Glorious Qur'aan, there are more than 100 "names" of Allah. By names we mean the qualities and powers of Allah that are manifested in those names. As an example, in just 3 verses of the Qur'aan- chap 59:vs.22-24; -the following qualities / attributes are mentioned of Allah.

"He is God, the One that there is no deity but **He**; the **Knower** of the unseen and the apparent; **He is the Source of All Mercy, the Merciful. He is God, the One** that there is no deity but **He**; the **King, the Holy One, the Source of All Peace, the Guardian of Faith, the Preserver, the Mighty, the Compeller, the Majestic; Glory to God, He is beyond their associations (of partners with Him)! He is God, the Creator, the Maker, and the Fashioner. To Him** belong the most beautiful names. All that is in the heavens and the earth magnifies **Him; He is the Mighty, the Wise."** (*Qur'aan 59:22-24*)

REPORT: The latest report of a Netherlands Psychologist, Professor Vander Hoven, a psychologist from Netherlands, announced his new discovery about the effect of reading the Qur'aan and repeating the word **ALLAH** both on patients and on normal persons. The Dutch professor confirms his discovery with studies and research applied on many patients over a period of three years. Some of his patients were non-Muslims, others do not speak Arabic and were trained to pronounce the word "**ALLAH**" clearly; the result was enormous, particularly on those who suffer from dejection and tension. 'Al Watan', a Saudi daily reported that the psychologist was quoted to say that Muslims who can read Arabic and who read the Qur'aan regularly can protect themselves from psychological diseases. The psychologist explained how each letter in the word "**ALLAH**" affects healing of psychological diseases. He pointed out in his research, that pronouncing the first letter in the word "**ALLAH**" which is the letter (A), released from the respiratory system, controls breathing. He added that pronouncing the velar consonant (L) in the Arabic way, with the tongue touching slightly the upper part of the jaw producing a short pause and then repeating the same pause constantly, relaxes the aspiration. Also, pronouncing the last letter which is the letter (H) makes a contact between the lungs and the heart and in turn this contact controls the heartbeat. What is exciting in the study is that this

psychologist is a non-Muslim, but interested in Islamic sciences and searching for the secrets of the Holy Qur'aan.

Allah, the Great and Glorious, says: "We will show them Our signs in the universe and in their own selves, until it becomes manifest to them that this (Qur'aan) is the truth". (Holy Qur'aan 42:53)

60. Question: ACCORDING TO ISLAM, MESSENGERS OR PROPHETS WERE SENT TO EACH AND EVERY NATION OF THE WORLD; SUBSEQUENTLY WHICH PROPHET WAS SENT TO INDIA? CAN WE CONSIDER RAM AND KRISHNA TO BE MESSENGERS OF GOD?

Answer: 1. (a) The Glorious Qur'aan mentions in Surah Fatir, chap 35 verse 24: "And there never were a people, without a warner having lived among them (in the past)." (b) A similar message is repeated in Surah Rad, chap 13 v. 7: "And sent to every people a guide."

2. a. "Surely We have revealed to thee as We revealed to Noah and the prophets after him, and We revealed to Abraham and Ishmael and Isaac and Jacob and the tribes, and Jesus and Job and Jonah and Aaron and Solomon, and We gave to David a scripture. And (We sent) messengers We have mentioned to thee before and messengers We have not mentioned to thee. And to Moses Allah addressed His word, speaking (to him)". *Qur'aan-Chap. 4. vs. 163/164.*

b. A similar message is repeated in Surah Ghafir chap 40 verse 78: "We did aforetime send messengers before thee: of them there are some whose story We have related to thee, and some whose story We have not related to thee . . ."

c. *Chap 10 v. 47-* "And for every nation there is a messenger".

3. Twenty-five Prophets of God are mentioned by name in the Qur'aan. *E.g.* Adam, Noah, Abraham, Saleh, Lut, Moses, Jesus, Muhammed (pbuh). According to Prophet Muhammed (pbuh), there were more than 124,000 prophets sent to this world in different times.

4. All the prophets that came before Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) were only sent for their own people and were to be followed only for a particular period of time. Qur'aan Chap 3 v, 49; "And (Jesus) a messenger to the Children of Israel," (particular nation)

5. Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) is the last and final messenger of Almighty God. It is mentioned in Surah Ahzab, chap 33 vs. 40: "Muhammed (pbuh) is not the father of any of your men, but (he is)

the Messenger of Allah, and the seal of the Prophets: and Allah has full knowledge of all things."

a. It is mentioned in Surah Ambiya, chap 21 vs. 107: **"We sent thee not, but as a mercy for all creatures."**

b. A similar message is repeated in Surah Saba, chap 34 verse 28: **"We have not sent thee but as a universal (messenger) to humankind, giving them glad tidings, and warning them (against sin), but most men understand not." (Al Qur'aan 34:28)**

c. It is mentioned in Sahih Bukhari, volume 1, Book of Salaah, chap 56 hadith no. 429: Narrated Jabir bin Abdullah: Allah's Messenger said, **"Every Prophet used to be sent to his nation only, but I have been sent to all of mankind."**

6. Since the names of Ram and Krishna are nowhere to be found in the Qur'aan and Sahih Hadith, one cannot say for sure whether they were prophets of God or not.

7. Even if Ram and Krishna were prophets of God, they were only meant for the people of that time only and were to be followed only for that particular period of time. Today, all the human beings throughout the world, including India should only follow the last and final Prophet and Messenger of God – Prophet Muhammed (pbuh).

61. Question: IF ALLAH HAS SENT HIS REVELATIONS IN EVERY PERIOD, THEN WHICH REVELATION WAS SENT TO INDIA? CAN WE CONSIDER THE VEDAS AND OTHER HINDU SCRIPTURES TO BE THE WORD OF GOD?

Answer: 1. The Glorious Qur'aan mentions in *Surah Rad, chap 13 vs. 38: "For each period is a book (revealed)."*

2. By name, only four revelations of God are mentioned in the Qur'aan.

At- Taurat to Moses (pbuh) Al- Injeel to Jesus (pbuh) (Eesa) (Moosa)

As-Zabur to David (Dawood) Al-Qur'aan to Muhammed (pbuh) - Last & Final Revelation

3. All the revelations that came before the Qur'aan was valid only for a particular people and for a particular time period.

4. The Qur'aan is the only revelation that is sent for whole of humankind, for all time as it is the last and final revelation. It is mentioned in:

a. *Chap 14 verse 1: "Alif Lam Ra". A book which We have revealed unto thee, in order that thou mayest lead mankind out of the depths of darkness into light . . ."*

b. *Also in Chap 14 verse 52: "Here is a Message for mankind; let them take warning there from, and let them know that He is (only) One God: let men of understanding take heed."*

c. *Qur'aan -Chap 2 verse 185: "Ramadaan is the (month) in which was sent down the Qur'aan, as a guide to mankind, also clear (signs) for guidance and judgement (between right and wrong)."*

d. *A similar message is repeated in Chap 39 vs.41: "Verily We have revealed the Book to thee in Truth, for (instructing) mankind."*

5. Since the names of the Vedas and other Hindu scriptures are nowhere to be found in Qur'aan and Sahih Hadith, one cannot say that they were the revelations of God. However, *even if* the Vedas and the other scriptures were revelations from God, they were only meant for people of that time and were to be followed only for that particular period of time. Today all human beings throughout the world, including India should follow only the last and final Revelation of God, i.e. the Qur'aan. Moreover, since all the previous revelations were not meant to be followed for eternity, Almighty God did not preserve them in their original form.

6. *There is not a single religious scripture of any religion that claims to be the word of God that has maintained its pure original text and is free from alteration, adulteration and interpolation, except the Glorious Qur'aan.* Since the Glorious Qur'aan is to be followed for eternity, Allah has taken it upon Himself to maintain its original purity and guard it from corruption, as Allah says in *Glorious Qur'aan chap 15 verse 9: "We have, without doubt, sent down the Message; and We will assuredly guard it (from corruption)"*.

7. Interestingly, a Hindu Professor by the name of **Pundit Vedaprakash Upadhyay**¹⁹⁹ has written a book titled "**Kalki Avatar**", in which he proves that Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) is the **AVATAR** mentioned in the Holy Books of the Hindus. His research has been endorsed and certified by no less than **EIGHT HINDU PUNDITS**. In his

199 The Professor is a research scholar at the Allahabad University of India, and the abovementioned facts have been taken from the "Sunday Standard" of Nairobi, Kenya.

book he states that all the Hindus of the world should accept Muhammed (pbuh) as the long awaited messenger of the Almighty.

62. Question: IS IT TRUE THAT HINDUISM FORBIDS IDOL WORSHIP, AND WHERE IS THIS STATED IN THE HINDU SCRIPTURES?

Answer: The fundamental principal of the Vedas regarding the concept of God is that He has got no image. And it is entirely wrong for the Hindu Scholars and Preachers to keep silent at the wrong practice of their people in worshipping idols or even using them for concentration or whatever purpose.

If you ask a common Hindu how many gods he believes in, he may say 3, some may say 33, and some may say a 1000, while others may say, 33 million. *But if you ask a Hindu Brahman, who knows his Religious Scriptures; he will tell you that a Hindu should actually believe and worship only in ONE GOD.* So let us analyze the concept of God in Hinduism, by analyzing their Religious Scriptures.

The most popular amongst all the Hindu Religious Scriptures, is the '**Bhagwat Geeta**'. *The Bhagwat Geeta says in Ch. No. 7, V. No.20- 'That those whose intelligence has been stolen by material desires, they worship the demi gods- Deprived of knowledge by this or that desire, men resort to other deities'* - It means that the materialistic people worship false gods - not the true Almighty God. The Upanishads are the other Sacred Scriptures of the Hindus. It is mentioned in the *Chandogya Upanishad, Ch.No. 6, Section No. 2, Verse No.1. 'Ekam Avidetum'* meaning - *there is only One God, He doesn't have any partner, He is alone*'. It corresponds to what the Holy Qur'aan states in Surah Ikhlas, Ch. No. 112, V. No.1, '**Say He is Allah, One and only**'.

It is mentioned in the Sweta Sutara Upanishad, Ch. No. 6, Verse No.9, '*Na Kasia Kasji Janita Nakadipa*', which means...'*Of Him there is no parents, nor Lord; He has got no parents, He has got no masters - He alone is sufficient, He is not dependent on anyone else*'. As the Holy Qur'aan says in Surah Ikhlas, Ch. No.112, v. No.3: '**He begets not, nor is He begotten**' The quotation from '*Upanishads*', was translated by S. Radha Krishnan. Further, if you read in the *Sweta Sutara Upanishads, Ch. No. 4, V. No. 19, it says ...'Natastiya Pratima Asti'* which means: '*There is no likeness of Him*'.

This corresponds with the *Holy Qur'aan, Surah Iklas, Ch. No. 112; Verse No. 4 - 'There is nothing like Him'*. In the next verse of the

Sweta Sutara Upanishads, Ch.No.4 Verse No. 20, it says - 'His form cannot be seen, No one can see Him with the eyes'²⁰⁰. This is similar to the message that is given in the Holy Qur'aan in Surah Anam, Ch.No.6, and V.No.103... 'No vision can grasp Him, but He grasps all vision, He is beyond comprehension, yet He is acquainted with all things'.

Amongst all the Religious Scriptures of the Hindus, the most sacred are the Vedas, and there are principally 4 Vedas - the Rigved, the Ajurved, the Samved, and the Atharvaved. The Rigved deals with 'Songs of praises'; the Ajurved deals with 'Sacrificial formulas', the Samved with Melody, and the Atharvaved with Magical formulas. It is mentioned in the Ajurved, Ch. No. 32, Verse No. 3... '*Natasti Pratima Asti*' - *There is no image of Him. He is unborn, and He should be worshipped*'. It is mentioned in the Yasjurved, Ch. No. 40, V. No.8 that '*God in bodiless and Pure*'. It is further mentioned in the Ajurved, Ch.No. 40, V.No.9, '*and asma Pravishanti Ya Sambaiti Upaste*', which means - '*They are entering darkness those who worship the Asambuti*'. The 'Asambuti' are the natural things like air, water, fire. And the verse continues... "*they are sinking more in darkness, those who worship the 'Sambuti'*". The 'Sambuti' are the 'created things'. The quotation I gave of Ajurved was by Devichand as well as by Ralfh.T. Grefith. The other Veda is the 'Atharvaved'. It is mentioned in *Atharveda, Book No. 20, Ch. No. 58, Verse No. 3 - It says 'Dev Maha Osi'... 'God is verily great*'. Corresponding to '*Allah-o-Akbar*' - *Allah is the Greatest*.

Amongst all the Vedas the most sacred and the oldest, is the Rigveda. It is mentioned in the *Rigved, Book. No. 1, Hymn No. 164, Verse No. 46... 'Sages call one God by many names'*.

It means there are various names given to this One God, and the Rigved alone gives no less than 33 different attributes to Almighty God - most of which are mentioned in Rigved, Book 2 Hymn No. 1; and one of the beautiful attribute which is mentioned in Rigved of the Almighty God is 'Brahama', which is mentioned in Rigved, Book No. 2, Hymn No.1, Verse No.3. '*Brahama*' means, '*The Creator*'. If you translate into Arabic, it means '*Khalique*'. We Muslims have got no objection if anyone calls Almighty God, Allah Subhana Wa Taala as '*Khalique*', or '*Creator*' or '*Brahama*'. But if someone describes

200 Some cruel fraudsters tricked the people into believing the shapes and forms they made is that of God, when it clearly states that NO ONE CAN SEE HIM! In Christianity is has also become the norm-to worship photo's, statues & crosses

'Brahama' - Almighty God- that he has got four heads, and on each head is a crown, and he has got four arms etc, then we Muslim take very strong objection to it. *Moreover, it is even prohibited in the Ajurved, Ch. No. 32; Verse No. 3, which says... 'Natastya Pratima Asti'- There is no image of Him.*

Another beautiful attribute, which is given in the Rigved, Book No. 2, Hymn No.1, Verse No. 3, is 'Vishnu' which means 'The Sustainer'. If you translate into Arabic, it means 'Ar'Razaak'. We Muslim have got no objection if someone calls Almighty God as 'Ar'Razaak' or 'Cherisher', 'Sustainer' or 'Vishnu'. But if someone says that 'Vishnu' is Almighty God who has got 4 hands, and one of his right hand holds the 'Chakra' that is the diskettes, and one of his left hand holds the conch and he is riding on a bird, or reclining on a couch of snakes, we Muslims take strong objection to it. *You are going against the Ajurved, Ch. No. 40, V.No.8, which says:*

'God is bodiless'- as well as Upanishads, Ch. No. 4, Verse No. 19, of Sweta Satra Upanishad, which says: 'Natastya Pratima Asti'... 'There is no likeness of Him'. It is mentioned in the Rigveda Book. No. 8, Hymn No. 1, Verse No. 1 'Maach dangadi Samshata' - that means... 'Do not worship anyone besides Him alone - Praise Him alone'. It is mentioned in the Rigved, Book No. 5, Ch. No. 81, Verse No. 1, - 'Verily great is the glory of the Divine Creator'

Same as Surah Fatihah, Ch. No. 1, V.No.2... '**Alhamdulillah hi Rabbil A'lameen'**... 'Praise be to Allah (swt) the Lord of the worlds'. It is further mentioned in *Rigved, Book No. 3, Hymn No. 34, Verse No.1, 'He is the Bountiest Giver'*. It is further mentioned in the Ajurved, Ch.No.40, V. No. 16 - '*Lead us to the good path, and save us from the sin which makes us wander and go astray*'. Similar to the verse Holy Qur'aan of Surah Fathiha Ch. No.1, Verse No.6 and 7, '**Show us the straight path, the path of those who have earned thine favour, And the path of those who go not astray**'.

It is mentioned in Rigved Book, No. 6, Hymn No. 45, Verse No. 16... 'Ya ekt it mustihi' - 'Praise Him who is Matchless and Alone'. The quotation I gave from the RigVed was by Satya Prakash Narayan and Satyakam Vidyalankar, as well as by Ralph.T.Grifith, Vol. I & Vol. II. We have various translations of Religious Scriptures of various Religions. So whatever quotations we give, if any one wants to verify that the speaker is not pulling a fast one, they are most welcome to come to Islamic Research Foundation and take a Photostat copy. All these translations that I quoted to you are not done by Muslims - but

by the scholars of Hinduism who follow that religion, as well as by Orientalists.

The 'Brahma Sutra' of Hinduism, of the Vedanta - the main teaching is, '**Akkum Braham Dusta Nastim - Niya nastim Kincham' 'Bagwan Ek hi hai, dhusra nahi hai, nahi hai, nahi hai, zara bhi nahi hai'**. Which means: '**There is only one God, not a second one, not at all, not at all, not in the least bit'**. So according to the Hindu Scriptures themselves you will understand the concept of God in Hinduism is also to believe in One God only, and there is no such teaching of idol worship.

There are more than 1,000 prophecies mentioned in the Hindu Scriptures alone about the coming of Prophet Muhammed (pbuh). Contact the I.R.F for the quotations (chapters and verses) from the various Scriptures. Now it is over to the Pundits and Learned Hindu Scholars to educate their people the correct concept of God according to the Scriptures!

63. Question: IS THE QUR'AAN ANTI-SEMITIC²⁰¹

Answer: These accusations are false and malicious propaganda. I need only to quote a few verses of the Glorious Qur'aan to disprove these bogus claims. All the Prophets of Bani Israel are recognised as the Prophets of Islam, and we Muslims love and revere them more than the Jews and Christians. This claim of Muslims can be verified by reading the Glorious Qur'aan, The Holy Bible and the Torah.

Al-Qur'aan-Chap 49 v 13 O mankind, surely We have created you from a male and a female, and made you tribes and families that you may know each other. Surely the noblest²⁰² of you with Allâh is the most dutiful of you.

Al-Qur'aan-Chap 32:vs.23-25: "And We indeed gave Moses the Book – so doubt not the meeting with Him – and We made it a guide for the Children of Israel. And We made from among them leaders to guide by Our command when they were patient. And they were certain of Our messages. Surely thy Lord will judge between them on the day of Resurrection concerning that wherein they differed".

201 The Jews have so indoctrinated / brainwashed the Christians about anti-Semitism that the Christian world has completely overlooked the fact that the Arabs are also Semitic, as their roots lead to Prophet Abraham from his first born son, Prophet Ishmail.

202 Superiority of one over another does not depend on nationality, wealth, or rank: but on the careful observance of duty, or moral greatness.

Al-Qur'aan Chap 61:14- “O you who believe, be helpers (in the cause) of Allah, as Jesus, son of Mary, said to the disciples: Who are my helpers in the cause of Allah? The disciples said: We are helpers (in the cause) of Allah. So a party of the Children of Israel believed and another party disbelieved; then We aided those who believed against their enemy, and they became predominant”.

Al-Qur'aan Chap 2:vs.87 to 93- “And We indeed gave Moses the Book and We sent messengers after him one after another; and We gave Jesus, son of Mary, clear arguments and strengthened him with the Holy Spirit. Is it then that whenever there came to you a messenger with what your souls desired not, you were arrogant? And some you gave the lie to and others you would slay. And they say: Our hearts are depositories. Nay, Allah has cursed them on account of their unbelief; so little it is that they believe. And when there came to them a Book from Allah verifying that which they have, and aforetime they used to pray for victory against those who disbelieved – but when there came to them that which they recognized, they disbelieved in it; so Allah’s curse is on the disbelievers. Evil is that for which they sell their souls – that they should deny that which Allah has revealed, out of envy that Allah should send down of His grace on whomsoever of His servants He pleases; so they incur wrath upon wrath. And there is an abasing chastisement for the disbelievers. And when it is said to them, Believe in that which Allah has revealed, they say: We believe in that which was revealed to us. And they deny what is besides that, while it is the Truth verifying that which they have. Say: Why then did you kill Allah’s prophets before (this) if you were believers? And Moses indeed came to you with clear arguments, then you took the calf (for a god) in his absence and you were wrongdoers. And when We made a covenant with you and raised the mountain above you: Take hold of that which We have given you with firmness and obey. They said: We hear and disobey. And they were made to imbibe (the love of) the calf into their hearts on account of their disbelief. Say: Evil is that which your faith bids you if you are believers”.

From the above few verses it is quite clear to any reasonable person that the Qur’aan lays down its own criteria of who is a better person in the sight of Allah. In the sight of Allah superiority of one over another does not depend on nationality, wealth, or rank, but on the careful observance of duty, or moral greatness.

64. Question: HOW IS THE QUR'AN THE GUARDIAN OF THE PREVIOUS SCRIPTURES, AND WHAT IS THE RELATION OF THE QUR'AN TO EARLIER SCRIPTURES

Answer: Previous Scriptures recognized

The Holy Qur'aan requires a belief not only in its own truth but also in the truth of previous scriptures delivered to the prophets of different nations of the world. At its commencement it lays down clearly: **"And (those) who believe in that which has been revealed to thee and that which was revealed before thee" (Q: 2:4).**

The universality of what was revealed before is clearly accepted:

"And there is not a people but a warner has gone among them" (Q: 35:24). "And for every nation there is a messenger" (Q: 10:47).

In case anyone should be misled by the names of a few prophets mentioned in the Holy Qur'aan, it is stated:

"And certainly We sent messengers before thee – of them are those We have mentioned to thee and of them are those We have not mentioned to thee" (40:78; 4:164).

Thus the Holy Qur'aan accepts the truth of the sacred books of the world, and hence it is again and again spoken of as a Book verifying, that which is before it. The basis of the relation in which the Holy Qur'aan stands to other scriptures is, therefore, that they are all members of one family; they all have a Divine origin.

Guardian of previous scriptures

The Verifier of the sacred books of the world, however, occupies a unique position among them. The relation in which the Holy Qur'aan stands to earlier scriptures is thus logically set forth by the Holy Book itself: **"And We have revealed to thee the Book with the truth, verifying that which is before it of the Book and a guardian over it" (Q: 5:48).**

The Qur'aan is thus not only a verifier of the sacred books of all nations as stated above; it is also a guardian over them. In other words, it guards the original teachings of the prophets of God, for, as already stated in this book, those teachings had undergone alterations, and only a revelation from God could separate the pure Divine teaching from the mass of error which had grown around it. This was the work done by the Holy Qur'aan, and hence it is called a guardian over the earlier scriptures. Of all the scriptures, it has particularly chosen the Gospels to show in what ways erroneous doctrines had almost entirely suppressed the truth preached by a prophet of God.

They seem, moreover, to have been chosen as an example, for how could earlier scriptures escape alterations, if the teachings of so recent a prophet as Jesus Christ could not be handed over intact to posterity?

The Qur'aan as a judge in existing differences

The Holy Qur'aan further claims that it came as a judge to decide the differences between the various religions: **"We certainly sent (messengers) to nations before thee ... And We have not revealed to thee the Book except that thou mayest make clear to them that wherein they differ"** (Q: 16:63, 64).

As already stated, the Qur'aan proclaimed that prophets had been raised in every nation, and, therefore, that every nation had received guidance from God, yet nation differed from nation even in the essentials of faith. The position of the Holy Qur'aan was, therefore, essentially that of a judge deciding between these various claimants.

It explains all obscurities.

The most important point to be borne in mind in connection with the relation of the Holy Qur'aan to the earlier scriptures is that it makes clear what is obscure in them and explains fully what is there stated briefly. *Revelation, according to the Holy Qur'aan, is not only universal but also progressive, and it attains perfection in the Final Revelation.* A revelation was granted to each nation according to its requirements, and in each age in accordance with the capacity of the people of that age. As the human brain became further developed, more and more light was cast by revelation on matters relating to the unseen, on the existence and attributes of the Divine Being, on the nature of revelation from Him, on the requital of good and evil, on life after death, and on paradise and hell. It is for this reason that the Holy Qur'aan is again and again called a Book "that makes manifest".

It shed complete light on the essentials of the faith and made manifest what had hitherto of necessity remained obscure.

Perfect Revelation of Divine Will.

Further, as a result of what has been said above, the Holy Qur'aan claims that it came as a perfect revelation of Divine will:

"This day have I perfected for you your religion and completed My favour to you and chosen for you Islam as a religion" (Q:5:3).

The finality of the Qur'aanic revelation is, therefore, based on its perfection. New scriptures were revealed as long as they were needed,

but when perfect light was cast on all essentials of religion in the Holy Qur'aan, no prophet was needed after Muhammed. Six hundred years before him, Jesus Christ, who was the last among these national prophets – the Holy Prophet Muhammad being the prophet not of one nation but of the whole world – had declared in plain words that he could not guide the world to Perfect Truth, because the world at that stage was not in a fit condition to receive that truth:

“I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now. Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth” (John 16: 12&13).

Among the scriptures of the world the Holy Qur'aan, therefore, occupies a unique position, as a perfect revelation of the Divine will.

The idea that the Qur'aan has merely borrowed something from the earlier scriptures, especially from the Torah and the Gospels, must be examined in the light of facts. The Qur'aan deals with the religious topics which are dealt with in those books goes without saying; and that it relates the history of some of the prophets whose history is also related in the Bible is also a fact, but to say that it borrows from those books is entirely wrong. Take first the essentials of religion as they are dealt with in the Holy Qur'aan. Neither the Old nor the New Testament, nor any other sacred book, makes any approach to the grand and noble truths that find expression in the Holy Qur'aan. Take next the histories of the prophets, as they are narrated in the Bible and as they are narrated in the Holy Qur'aan, and you will find that the latter corrects the errors of the former as it does in the matter of religious doctrines.

The Bible speaks of many of the prophets of God as committing the most heinous sins; it speaks of Abraham as telling lies and casting away Hagar and her son; it speaks of Lot as committing incest with his own daughters; it speaks of Aaron as making a calf for worship and leading the Israelites to its worship; it speaks of David as committing adultery with Uriah's wife; it speaks of Solomon as worshipping idols; but the Holy Qur'aan accepts none of these statements, definitely rejects most of them and clears these prophets of the false charges against them. The unlearned Prophet of Arabia swept away the errors, which were a blot on the face of prophethood. Thus one can conclude that the Glorious Qur'aan is the **FURQAAN**.

65. Question: IS IT TRUE THAT A PERSON IS KILLED IF HE/SHE BECOMES APOSTATE?

Answer: There is no punishment for apostasy in Islam.

This is another widely prevailing misconception about Islam. It is generally thought that the Qur'aan provides a death sentence for those who desert the religion of Islam. The Qur'aan speaks repeatedly of people going back to unbelief after believing, but never once does it say that they should be killed or punished. *This was in the Law of the Old Testament that has been abrogated in the Glorious Qur'aan.* Here again we see the superiority of the Glorious Qur'aan in abrogating the punishment of death for apostasy and replacing it with a more just Law. Quotes from the Old Testament: *Deut. Chapter 13 vs.6:- "If thy brother, the son of thy mother, or thy son, or thy daughter, or the wife of thy bosom, or thy friend, which is as thine own soul, entice thee secretly, saying, Let us go and serve other gods, which thou hast not known, thou, nor thy fathers; 7. Namely, of the gods of the people which are round about you, nigh unto thee, or far off from thee, from the one end of the earth even unto the other end of the earth; 8. Thou shalt not consent unto him, nor hearken unto him; neither shall thine eye pity him, neither shalt thou spare, neither shalt thou conceal him: 9. But thou shalt surely kill him; thine hand shall be first upon him to put him to death, and afterwards the hand of all the people. 10. And thou shalt stone him with stones, that he die; because he hath sought to thrust thee away from the LORD thy God".*

Now compare with the new Law of the Glorious Qur'aan:

"Those who disbelieve after their believing then increase in disbelief, their repentance is not accepted, and these are they that go astray" (Glorious Qur'aan – Chapter 3. v. 90).

"And whoever of you turns back from his religion, then he dies while an unbeliever – these it is whose works go for nothing in this world and the Hereafter" (Glorious Qur'aan Chapter-2. v. 217).

"O you who believe, should anyone of you turn back from his religion, then Allah will bring a people whom He loves and who love Him" (Glorious Qur'aan 5. v. 54).

The Qur'aan exposes a plan of the Jews to adopt Islam first and then desert it, thus creating the impression that Islam was not a religion worth following (Q-3:72). Such a scheme could never have entered their minds while living at Madinah, where the Government was Muslim, if according to the Quranic law, apostasy were punishable

with death. *The misconception seems to have arisen from the fact that people who, after becoming apostates, joined the enemy, were treated as enemies, or that, where an apostate took the life of a Muslim, he was put to death, not for changing his religion, but for committing murder.*

CHAPTER FOUR

Details on St. Paul who is the real founder of “Christianity”

Paul who's real name was Saul was born a Jew, and had adopted the Roman²⁰³ way of life. He was an avowed enemy of Jesus (pbuh) and his teachings. Some of the most significant facts as recorded by Christian Scholars are below. Any person seeking the truth has to compare the teachings of Jesus (pbuh) and that of Paul.

TEACHINGS OF JESUS (PBUH)

Jesus (pbuh) Practiced Sabbath on Saturday

MARK 7:7- Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

Matt 15:9- But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.

Matt 5: 17 Think not that I (Jesus (pbuh)) am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. Matt 5:18 For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. Matt 5:19 Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. Matt 5:20 For I say unto you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven. Matt 7:21 Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father, which is in heaven. Matt 7:22 Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done

203 The Roman believed in many gods and goddesses. Paul adopted their beliefs and introduced the concept of 3 in 1.

many wonderful works? *Matt 7:23* And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.

Matt 7:20. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them.

In any event, if there is any division between a Muslim and a Christian on the grounds of dogma, belief, ethics or morality, then the cause of such conflict could be traced to an utterance of Paul found in his books of Corinthians, Philippians, Galatians, Thessalonians, etc., in the Bible. As against the teachings of the Jesus (pbuh) that salvation only comes through keeping of the commandments (*Mathew 19:16-17*), Paul nails the law and the commandments to the cross (*Colossians 2:14*) and claims that salvation can only be obtained through the death and resurrection of Jesus (pbuh) Christ:- Refer to: *2 Timothy v. 8: "Remember that Jesus Christ of the seed of David was raised from the dead according to my (Paul's) gospel"*: This is indisputable proof that Paul taught this false doctrine that the Church has been preaching for centuries that has no evidence in the words of Jesus (pbuh) .

"If Christ be not risen from the dead, then our preaching is vain, and your faith is also vain." (*1 Corinthians 15:14*)

According to St. Paul, there is nothing that Christianity can offer mankind, other than the blood and gore of Jesus (pbuh). If Jesus (pbuh) did NOT die, and he was NOT resurrected from the dead, then there can be NO salvation in Christianity!

NO CRUCI-FIXTION – NO CHRISTIANITY

"The death of Jesus on the cross is the centre of all Christian theology. All Christian statements about god, about creation, about sin and death have their focal point in the crucified Christ. All Christian statements about history, about the church, about faith and sanctification, about the future and about hope stem from the crucified Christ" Professor Jurgen Moltmann in his – "The Crucified God".

Vatican Church follows Paul's teachings

Paul Changed Sabbath from Saturday to Sunday

(1) Paul was not chosen as one of the disciples of Jesus (pbuh).

(2) Paul introduced the concept of 'son of God'. (Refer Acts 9, v. 20) whereas the foundation of belief of Jesus and Moses and all the Prophets is the belief in ONE GOD.

Paul contradicts all the fundamental teachings of Jesus (pbuh).

***Gal 2:15* We who are Jews by nature, and not sinners of the Gentiles,**

Gal 2:16 Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus (pbuh) Christ, even we have believed in Jesus (pbuh) Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law; for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.

Romans 3:27 Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay: but by the law of faith.

Romans 3:28 Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the law.

1 Cor 10:24 Let no man seek his own, but every man another's wealth²⁰⁴. **1 Cor 10:25** Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, that eat, asking no question for conscience sake –

Note: The words spoken by Jesus (pbuh) regarding the observation of the LAW OF MOSES is destroyed by Paul in its entirety. Jesus (pbuh) observed the Law as is recorded in many places of the Bible.

Paul encourages people to steal others wealth in 1st Cor 10:24 when the Commandants prohibit such acts.

Refer to more lies spoken by Paul in Acts 23:6, Acts 25:10-12, 2 Corinthians 11:6 and 11:8

The 'crucifixion' that was preached by Paul in I Corinthians has been proved false by the arguments and proofs from the Bible itself in Question number 54; so the belief of Christianity has been shattered as far as the myth of crucifixion and atonement of sins is concerned. So in reality there is no Christianity, as Jesus (pbuh) never preached Christianity, but rather the Law of Moses (pbuh) that Jesus (pbuh) adhered to.

John 14:15 "If ye love me, keep my commandments"

The one sin Allah will not forgive is that of associating partners with Him as mentioned in *Al-Qur'aan chap 4 v 48*:

"Lo! Allah does not forgive that a partner should be ascribed to Him. He forgives (all) except that to whom He will. Whoso ascribes partners to Allah, he has indeed invented a tremendous sin."

Glorious Qur'aan 3:8 "Our Rabb! Cause not our hearts to stray after Thou has guided us, and bestow upon us mercy from Thy presence. Lo! Thou, only art the Bestower".

204 Paul encourages robbing others of their wealth. Bush & Blair are doing just that in Iraq by robbing the Iraqis of their oil.

CHAPTER FIVE

SUMMARY OF A LECTURE BY ZAKIR NAIK ON THE TOPIC: "IS THE QUR'AAN GOD'S WORD?"

All praises are alone for Allah, and I invoke peace and blessings on the last and final messenger of Allah, Muhammed (pbuh) who is the best of creation. I welcome all of you with the Islamic greeting: 'Assalamualaikum warahmatullahi wabarakatuhu'. May peace, blessings and mercy of Almighty Allah be upon all of you. The topic of this talk is: "IS THE QUR'AAN GOD'S WORD?" Many people have a misunderstanding that Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) is the founder of the religion of Islam. In fact, Islam is in existence since man first set foot on the earth. God Almighty sent revelations and thousands of messengers to this earth over thousands of years. All the previous Prophets sent by Allah were meant for their people / nation only, and their message was meant for a particular time period. Miracles performed by these Prophets, like the parting of the sea, turning of the staff into a snake, curing the blind and infirm etc convinced the people of that time of their credentials of being a Prophet. However those miracles cannot be examined and verified by anyone today.

Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) was the last and final messenger of Allah sent to all the worlds and his message is valid till eternity. The Qur'aan mentions in **Surah Al-Ambiya, Ch. No. 21, v 107...** "That we have sent thee not but as a mercy to the whole of humankind²⁰⁵, as a mercy to all the worlds". Since Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) was the last and final messenger, his message is everlasting, and the miracle given to him by Allah is also everlasting and examinable by us for all times. **Al-Qur'aan is the miracle²⁰⁶ of miracle for all times.** It proved itself to be a miracle 1,400 years ago, and it can be reconfirmed as a miracle today and forever.

Probably the only point that non-Muslims agree with Muslims is that the Al Qur'aan was recited for the very first time by Muhammed

205 Only Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) was sent for the whole of mankind as the Qur'aan has stated a number of times. Jesus (pbuh) was sent only to his people, the Bani Israel as he stated many times as recorded in the Bible: *Matt 10:6 -But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. Matt 15:24 -But he answered and said, I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel. Also Matt 15:26*

206 The Qur'aan is the only living tangible verifiable miracle for all time.

(pbuh), a man born in the city of Makkah in Arabia in the 6th century. Regarding the source of the Holy Qur'aan, there can be basically 3 different assumptions. The 1st is that the Holy Prophet is its author. The 2nd assumption is that Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) obtained it from other human sources or from other religious scripture. And the 3rd assumption is that the Holy Qur'aan does not have a human author but it is verbatim the word and revelation of God Almighty.

We shall decisively examine all three assumptions.

1st assumption: Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) was the author himself.

It is highly abnormal to challenge the testimony of a person who disclaims the responsibility of any great work, whether it is scientific or otherwise.

The strategy of the kuffar is to cast doubt on the origin of the Qur'aan when they say that Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) was the author. **The Prophet never claimed that he was the author of the Qur'aan. In fact, he always said that it was a revelation from Allah.** History records that the Prophet never told a lie in his entire life, even before he received prophethood. The entire population of Makkah acclaimed him as a person who was honest, noble, and chaste. Friends and foes alike gave him the title 'Al-Ameen' - meaning the trustworthy. *Even those who refused to accept his message of Islam when Allah appointed him as a Prophet continued to keep their valuables with him for safe keeping.*

Taking all of the above into consideration, why should an honest person lie and say that the Qur'aan is a word of God and that he was a prophet? Let us examine further the claims made by the kuffar. Some say that Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) attributed the Qur'aan to Allah and said he was a Prophet for material and worldly benefits. However, the facts are that *Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) was financially better off before prophethood than after prophethood.* He had married a rich businesswoman, (a widow) by the name of Khadijah. She was 40 and he was 25 years old. He received Prophethood 15 years after his marriage to Khadijah when he was 40 years. After he became a Prophet his life was unenviable. According to An-Nawawi in Riyadh as Saleheen, No. 492, it says: Ayesha who was the wife of our beloved Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) said that there were times when months would pass by without having a fire lit in the house to cook food because there was no food to cook. They survived on water, dates and goat's milk. *This was not just a*

temporary phase. It was a way of life for the Prophet. According to Riyadh as Saleheen, No. 465 and 466, Bilal said that whenever the Prophet received gifts and provision he gave it to the poor and the needy and never kept anything back for himself.

In Chap 2 v 79, of the Qur'aan Allah Himself negates the charge of claiming Prophethood for material gain as the kuffar alleged, and exposed the kuffar of doing exactly what they were accusing the Holy Prophet of.

'Then woe to those who write the book with their own hands'... 'and then say this is from Allah'... 'To traffic with it for a miserable price'... 'Then woe to those for what their hands do write'... 'And woe to those for what they earn'.

If Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) himself had written the Qur'aan and attributed it to Allah then most definitely at some point of his life he would have been exposed by Allah, as the Jews and Christians have been exposed above. He would then have been called a hypocrite and a liar and would be cursing himself in his own book. Some people allege that Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) attributed the Qur'aan to Allah and called himself a Prophet for status, power, glory, and for leadership. This is also a disgraceful lie of those who have no answer to the challenges of the Qur'aan.

Let us examine the qualities of a person who wants power, status, leadership and glory. He will be a materialistic person who will wear fancy clothes, eat very good food, live in mansions / monumental buildings, has bodyguards etc.

Our beloved Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) milked his own goat, mended his own clothes, repaired his own shoes, and even did the household work. He was an amazing model of simplicity and humbleness. He slept on the floor; went to shop in the market for household goods without any guards, and even accepted the invitation of the poor to dine with them. He ate graciously whatever was placed before him. On many occasions the pagan Arabs sent deputations to the prophet and said... *'All we ask of you is to give up this claim of prophethood, and we give you plenty of wealth to make you the richest man in Arabia, and you can have the most beautiful women of your choice, and we will crown you our king. The only demand we have is that you should give up this message to worship only one God'.*

Allah revealed the following verse in response to these overtures of the kuffar: **“And their purpose was to tempt thee away from that which We revealed unto thee, to substitute in Our Name something quite different: (in that case), behold! They would certainly have made thee (their) friend! (Chap 17 verse 73)**

On many other occasions as well the Pagan Makkans approached the Prophet through his Uncle Abu Talib to give up this message and that he will be made the wealthiest man in Arabia. The prophet refused point blank and said... *‘O My uncle, even if they put the sun in my right hand and the moon in my left hand, I will not give up this mission until I die as it is from the Rabb of the alamien’.*

Allah revealed the following verse in response to the kuffar who said to the Prophet to bring a Qur’aan other than this and to change certain verses²⁰⁷. The Prophet is ordered in the Qur’aan to inform them:

“Say: If Allah had so willed, I should not have rehearsed this Qur’aan to you, nor should He have made it known to you. A whole lifetime before this have I tarried amongst you: will you not then understand?” (Chap: 10 v. 16.)

The Makkans then drew up a document boycotting and ostracizing the Prophet and his entire clan, Muslim and Non-Muslim²⁰⁸ from all economic, social and other activities. During the 3 years of the boycott the Prophet suffered untold pain, suffering and hunger. *Question-* Why should a person lead a life of such suffering and sacrifices if he was a false prophet? He was offered kingship and every material benefit just only to stop his preaching, but he chose this tremendous suffering. Does this not make one pause and to think?

If anyone doubts, or thinks that the Qur’aan has been forged, then there are several ways to disprove it to be the word of Allah, and amazingly enough the Qur’aan itself gives certain tests to prove it wrong which we will be dealing with InshaAllah, further on. Some of them said he was crazy, God forbid. Let us analyze this claim of the kuffar as well. What they fail to realize is that the Qur’aan was revealed during a period of 23 years. *The Qur’aan was not revealed*

207 Refer Glorious Qur’aan chap 10 verse 15

208 It is noteworthy that even those who did not accept the message of Islam in the Prophet’s clan at that time did not abandon him, but withstood the sanctions with him with those who believed in him.

all at one time- It was revealed over a period of 23 years in stages, part by part as foretold in Isaiah 28:10-11:

“For precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to his people.”

Qur’aan Chap 25:v.32/33- **“And those who disbelieve say: Why has not the Qur’aan been revealed to him all at once? Thus, that We may strengthen thy heart thereby and We have arranged it well in arranging- And they cannot bring thee a question, but We have brought thee the truth and the best explanation.**

Chapter 17 v. 106: **And it is a Qur’aan We have made distinct, so that thou mayest read it to the people by slow degrees, and We have revealed it in portions.**

Let me try and explain the significance of this. Here is a man, who cannot read and write as is proven beyond doubt by the Glorious Qur’aan in chap 29, v, 48 & chap 7, v, 157 and even by Christian historians, reciting to the people constantly a revelation so consistent during the 23 years of revelation, that there is not a single contradiction or even one scientific fact that can be disproved, even today in the 21st century with all the technology available. How will an unlearned person, or for that matter a learned person, be able to remember what he said 3, 5 or 15 years ago and then continue to give further information on the same subject matter years later, when all the time he is giving more information and more instructions on so many other matters simultaneously as was the case. Neither can a person be under the false impression that he is a prophet when everything is coming from his sub conscious mind for a period of 23 years. There are several facts in the Qur’aan that disprove this.

For example: Al-Qur’aan mentions several historical events, (like that of Pharaoh’s body which Allah has kept intact as a sign) which no one at the time of the Prophet knew. There are several more prophecies, which are mentioned in the Qur’aan that have been fulfilled during the Prophet’s lifetime and thereafter. One of them is that of the wars between the Romans and the Persians during the Prophet’s time. The Romans had just lost the war against the Persians, and the kuffar of Makkah were rejoicing as the Persians were idol worshippers and the Romans claimed to follow Christianity. Allah revealed in the Glorious Qur’aan in chap 30, vs., 1-6, that in a short time the Romans will overpower the Persians; and that is exactly what happened about 9 nine years later. For a country to be devastated and the cream of

youth to be lost in battle, and then to recover and defeat the enemy in a short span of nine years is phenomenal. Yet Allah had promised this in His Book and so it had to take place no matter what! Consider the fact that after the Second World War how many decades it took for Germany and Japan to recover and one will realise that 9 years is indeed a short space of time as the Glorious Qur'aan states. *There are hundreds of scientific facts that were unknown 1, 400 years ago which have been confirmed as facts today in the 20th and 21st century. It is impossible for these sorts of facts to come out from a subconscious mind or a crazy mind.*

The Qur'aan testifies in *Surah Araf, Ch. 7, v 184, -'Do they not reflect that their companion is not one possessed with evil but he is a propitious warner'*. The Qur'aan repeats in *Al-Qalam, Ch. 68, v 2, 'Thou art not by the grace of thy Lord crazy or possessed'*.

Chap- 81, v 22, - 'Your companion is neither possessed nor mad'.

The second assumption: that the prophet copied it from other religious scriptures or he got it from some human source. One historical fact is sufficient to prove this theory wrong. Our beloved prophet Muhammed (pbuh) was an ummi²⁰⁹ and the Qur'aan testifies to this in *Surah Ankabut, Ch. 29, v 48, 'that thou was not able to recite any book before this book was revealed, nor was thou able to transcribe it before this. In that case indeed the talkers of vanities would have doubted'*.

Allah knew that people would doubt the source of the Qur'aan. That is the reason why in His divine wisdom, He chose His last and final messenger, Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) to be an Ummi, an illiterate and unlettered Prophet. Otherwise surely the babblers, the talkers of vanities, the critics, and the cynics would have had some credence to state that the Prophet copied it from somewhere else and rehatched it in a new form (nauzubillah) if the Prophet had been literate. But even this claim is denied them.

The Qur'aan states in *Surah Sajdah, Ch. 32, vs. 1 to 3... 'Alif lam meem. This is the revelation of a book without doubt from the Lord of the worlds. Do they say he has forged it? Nay! It is a truth from thy Lord, so that thou may admonish a people to whom no warner was sent before- so that they may receive some guidance'*.

209 Means 'one who is unlearned' or 'one who cannot read and write'

Surah Baqarah, chap 2, v. 2; "this is a Book; in it is guidance, sure, without doubt, to those who fear Allah;

Surah Al- Imraan, chap 3, v. 3: "It is He Who sent down to thee (Muhammed) (step by step), in truth, the Book, confirming what went before it; and He sent down the Law (Moses) and the Gospel (Jesus) before this, as a guide to mankind..."

The Qur'aan does not have narrations like other religious scriptures. Other religious scriptures have a typical human style and sequence of narrations like a storybook. They say: in the beginning was God; He made the heavens and the earth. In the beginning was the word, it now it came to pass, and so it happened etc. The name of his father, and his grandfather and mother etc.

The Qur'aan has its own divine style. It is a unique and dynamic book. As humankind has advanced intellectually, we have discovered a better understanding of the Qur'aanic verses as previously we had not the intellectual capacity to truly understand those verses pertaining especially scientific knowledge. It is a revelation from Allah that appeals to human beings firstly to ponder about the creation around us and note its order. *The Qur'aan continuously asks humankind to reason and to think.* The Qur'aan lays down rules and regulations for orderly human existence and lays down laws governing justice and equality. It cautions us not to repeat the mistakes of past civilizations and informs us of the punishment that was meted out to them. It also reveals information about all branches of sciences, and man continuously benefits from this knowledge since its revelation. Every generation that discovers new frontiers in the phenomena of Botany, Embryology, Physiology, the Cosmos and such like have already been revealed in the Qur'aan 1,400 years ago.

All types of question that a person has regarding any aspect are also answered in the Glorious Qur'aan. The people who cannot prove that the Qur'aan is a work of a human being in desperation say that the Qur'aan is a deception. *However hard they try, they will not be able to point out a single deception in the entire Qur'aan.* People who are averse to the truth believe in things for which they have got no proof whatsoever, and they fool themselves and obstinately stick to it. These types of people do not use the intellect that is given to human beings. It is strange, sad and shocking that in this modern age of computers and astounding technology, that some people still decline to analyze with reason what they believe in. They refuse to remove

the blinkers that are on their spiritual eyes and remain dogmatic in their wrong beliefs.

The Qur'aan says that revelation goes in parallel with reason. Christians (and some Muslims) say that Holy Scriptures are beyond understanding. If they are beyond understanding, then how can we decipher which of the Holy Scriptures are true and which are false? *In fact the Qur'aan is the only religious scripture that encourages reasoning, and discussion.* Many Muslims feel that we should avoid religious discussions with Christians, but they are sadly mistaken.

Qur'aan -Surah Nahl, Ch.16, v 125: 'Invite all to the way of thy Lord with wisdom and beautiful preaching, and argue with them and reason with them in the ways that are best and most gracious'.

Qur'aan-Surah Yusuf chap. 12 v 108, the Prophet is ordered by Allah to say-"This is my way: I call towards Allah with sure knowledge, I and whosoever follows me - Glory be to Allah - and I am not of the idolaters".

The Qur'aan encourages discussion and reasoning. Therefore it is not surprising that the Arabic word 'Qalu' which means 'they say' is mentioned 332 times and the Arabic word 'Qul' which means 'say' is also mentioned 332 times. This proves that the Qur'aan encourages discussion.

There is a theory known as 'exhausting the alternatives'.

The Qur'aan claims that it is a revelation from Allah. If anyone disagrees, then they must prove otherwise and give the other alternative. Some said it is a handiwork of Prophet Muhammed (pbuh). This has been disproved. Some said he lied for material gain, nauzubillah, but that has also been disproved. *The Qur'aan challenges: put forth your claims and see whether your claims stand the test. The Qur'aan claims it is from Allah. If anyone disagrees, then try your best to prove otherwise!*

In Surah Jathiyah, Ch. No. 45, Verse No. 1 & 2-

'Ha meem... This is a revelation of the book from Allah, the exalted in power full of wisdom'.

The same message is repeated in: Surah Anam, Ch. No. 6, Verse No. 19; & 91 -; in Surah Yusuf, Ch. No. 12, Verse No. 1 & 2; - in Surah Taha, Ch. No. 20, Verse No. 113-; in Surah Nahl, Ch. No. 27, Verse No. 6; - Surah Sajdah, Ch. No. 32, Verse No. 1 to 3; - Surah Yasin, Ch. No. 36, Verse No. 1 to 3; - in Surah Al-Zumar, Ch. No. 39, Verse No. 1; - Surah Jathiyah, Ch. No. 45; Verse No. 2, - Surah Rahman, Ch. No. 55, Verse No. 1 to 2; - Surah Waqiah, Ch. No. 56, Verse No. 77 and 80; - Surah Insan, Ch. No. 76, Verse No. 23;- and in many other verses.

The Qur'aan challenges... 'This is a revelation from Allah', if it is not, then what is it? The answer is self evident, but those whose hearts are averse to the truth will never admit that it is from the All Knowing, and they surely be the losers in the hereafter!

How to test?

The scientific community has a different approach. *They have what is called a 'falsification test'*. They will only study a theory if the discoverer of that theory will also present ways in which to prove his theory wrong. When Albert Einstein presented a new theory of how the universe functioned at the beginning of the 20th century, he gave 3 falsification tests, stating that if the scientific community thought his theory was wrong then they should perform these three tests and his theory will be proved wrong. The scientists examined it for 6 years, and concluded that the theory of Albert Einstein was correct.

Al-Qur'aan has several such falsification tests.

When any Muslim in future gets into dialogue on the topic of religion, you have to ask the Christian, Jew or Hindu: **"Do you have a way to prove your religion to be the false"?** *Believe me I have not come across any person of any other religion who has told me that they have a way to prove their religion false (fake). **The Qur'aan is the ONLY scripture that has not one, but numerous falsification tests.***

Some of the tests to prove the Qur'aan to be the absolute word of Allah were meant only for the past, but some of them are pertinent for all times. Let us take a few examples. The Prophet had an uncle by the name of Abu Lahab. He and his wife were two the most antagonistic opponents of the Prophet and troubled him no end. They would abuse him physically and verbally. When the Prophet would meet and talk to any strangers to invite them to Islam, Abu Lahab would rebut what the Prophet had said. Because of Abu Lahab's atrocious and hostile attitude to Islam, Allah revealed a chap named Surah Lahab, Ch. 111 (5 verses) in the Qur'aan wherein Allah has destined him and his wife to hell. It says:

“Perish the hands of Abu Lahab! Perish he! No profit to him from all his wealth, and all his gains! Burnt will he be in a fire of blazing flame! His wife shall carry the wood as fuel! A twisted rope of palm fibre round her own neck!”

This Surah was revealed 10 years before the death of Abu Lahab.

The astonishing disclosure relating to the future could never be made by a mere mortal, who cannot foretell the ordinary events of life happening before his eyes day and night. *Ultimately it states that Abu Lahab and his wife will never accept Islam and become Muslims.* In that duration of ten years many of Abu Lahab’s friends who were also vigorous opponents of the Prophet embraced Islam, but Abu Lahab and his wife did not embrace Islam. Consider the fact that since he used to always lie against the Prophet, the only thing he had to do was to speak one additional lie to disprove the Qur’aan by saying: ‘I accept the message of the Prophet and am now a Muslim’. It was so easy for him to prove the Qur’aan wrong, as he did not even have to behave like a Muslim, and the Qur’aan would have been proven wrong. *But he could not and did not say it.*

No human being can ever make such a statement in his book as it leaves him open to being proven wrong even if the enemy will say it for the sake of proving his opponent wrong. *If the Qur’aan had been the word of the Prophet, he would never have made such a statement as he saw Abu Lahab’s friends embracing Islam and he would have feared to make such a statement that could have been used against him if Abu Lahab had accepted Islam. It would have destroyed his credibility and destroyed his mission.*

However, the Prophet read out the revelation as he received it from Allah, through the Angel Gibrael as he knew that this was a divine revelation and only a divine revelation can make such an unequivocal claim! Keep in mind that this was a standing challenge to Abu Lahab for TEN YEARS.

Another such example is in *Chapter. 2, vs. 94 – 96-* **“Say: If the abode of the Hereafter with Allah is especially for you to the exclusion of the people, then invoke death if you are truthful. And they will never invoke it on account of what their hands have sent on before, and Allah knows the wrongdoers. And thou wilt certainly find them the greediest of men for life, (greedier) even than those who set up gods (with God). One of them loves to be granted a life of a thousand years, and his being granted a long life will in no way**

remove him further off from the chastisement. And Allah is Seer of what they do”.

This was revealed during a disagreement between the Jews and the Muslims, when the Jews said that the last home of Allah (paradise) is for the Jews alone and not for anyone else. Allah revealed a verse stating that if the Jews claim that paradise is especially meant only for them, then they must seek (pray) for death. To disprove the Qur’aan, any one of Jews present there at that time – even a single one – should have said ‘I seek for death’ and the Qur’aan would have been proved wrong. Not even a single one of them could do it! Again it proves that only a Divine revelation can make such a claim. *It is a falsification test.*

Verse 4 of Chapter 94 was revealed in the **1st year** of the revelation of the Glorious Qur’aan, when the Prophet was being mercilessly persecuted and was so oppressed that who would have ever thought that he would be exalted for all time. However at that point in time of his life Allah revealed this chapter informing him that he will be world famous and exalted in the whole world. Muhammed (pbuh) with complete faith in Allah read out these verses and was derided by his enemies, but again one can see that it has been proven till today that his name is called out all over the world from the minarets of mosques and read in the obligatory and non-obligatory prayers with love and reverence. Even non-Muslims have concluded that he was the greatest person who has ever lived! Can anyone besides the Creator make this claim at such a time in the prophet’s life when he was in so much desolation?

Chap 94 v. 4: “And exalted for thee thy mention”

This is a clear prophecy in the 1st year of the revelation of the Qur’aan in Makkah of the glorious eminence to which the Holy Prophet was to be raised, uttered at a time when he was alone and unknown.

People may say that all these tests are of the past, but how can we prove the Qur’aan wrong today. The beauty of the Glorious Qur’aan is that it has falsification tests for all period of times- for the past, present, future and till eternity. *The Qur’aan challenges in Surah Isra, Ch. 17, v. 88, ‘that if all of humankind and jinns gathered together to produce the like of the Qur’aan, they will not be able to do it even if they helped each other’.*

The Arabic language of the Qur’aan is so clear, so meaningful, so intelligible, unsurpassable, and miraculous, *and yet it does not*

deviate away from truth by one jot, even though it rhymes, unlike any other poetry and literature. It is the highest order of rhetoric towards the revelation. The same verse of the Qur'aan can convince common persons, as well as educated people.

It is a miraculous book. *The same challenge to produce a recital like the Qur'aan is given in Surah Tur, Ch. 52, v. 34. Later on Allah made the challenge easier in Surah Hud, Ch. 11, v. 13, which says, 'Do they say he has forged it, then tell them produce 10 such Surahs forged and let them call for help anyone besides Allah if they speak the truth'. And no one could produce 10 Surahs exactly like the Qur'aan.*

Allah then simplifies the test even further and says in Surah Yunus, Ch. 10, v. 38, that -'Do they say he has forged it, say- produce One Surah exactly forged like the Qur'aan'. One Surah forged exactly like the Qur'aan and call to help anyone besides Allah if you speak the truth, and still they could not do it.

The smallest chap in the Glorious Qur'aan is chap 108, which has only ten words, yet no one has ever been able to meet the challenge to produce one chap like the chaps of the Glorious Qur'aan.

Thereafter Allah (SWT) makes the test even simpler. *The easiest falsification test is in Surah Baqarah, Ch. 2, vs. 23 and 24, which says... 'And if you are in doubt as what we have revealed to Our servant from time to time - then produce a Surah somewhat similar to it- And call forth your helpers and witnesses if there are any besides Allah if you speak the truth - but you cannot - and of a surety you cannot - then fear the fire whose fuel is men and stones - which is prepared for those who reject faith'.*

The first challenge of the Qur'aan is: produce a recital like the Qur'aan. Thereafter Allah simplified the challenge and said produce just 10 Surahs like the Qur'aan. Then He made it even easier and said produce just one Surah. Thereafter He made it the simplest challenge by saying 'produce one Surah somewhat similar' - 'Mim mislihi'. In the other places the Qur'aan says 'Mislihi'. Here it says 'Mim mislihi' meaning 'somewhat similar' to the Qur'aan. The non-Muslim Arabs failed miserably.

Arabic was at its peak when the Qur'aan was revealed. Several pagan Arabs tried but they failed miserably. Some of their works are yet present in the history books and it makes them look very foolish. The challenge was there 1,400 years ago, and it is here even today. Today,

there are more than 20 million Coptic Christians; - that is Christians who are Arabs by birth and Arabic is their mother tongue. The only thing they have to do is produce one Surah somewhat similar to the Qur'aan if they want to try and prove the Qur'aan wrong.

Certain Surahs (chaps) of the Qur'aan contain very few words, but so far no one has been able to do it and no one will be able to do it till eternity, insha-Allah. You may say that Arabic is not my mother tongue so where do I fit in this test. The Glorious Qur'aan has a test even for the non-Arabs who do not know Arabic; and if they want to try and prove the Qur'aan wrong, they can very well try their best.

I started my talk by quoting a verse 82 from chapter 4 of the Holy Qur'aan which says -

'Do they not consider the Qur'aan with care? Had it been from other than Allah, they would surely have found therein much discrepancy'.

The Qur'aan challenges anyone that if you want to prove the Qur'aan wrong, then just point out a single contradiction or a single discrepancy, and the Qur'aan would be proved not to be the word of the God. *It is so easy.* Today, more than at other times, the Christian Missionaries²¹⁰ are forging lies against the Qur'aan and the Prophet to stop Christians reverting to Islam. They have a great fear of Islam, because thousands of Christians are reading the Glorious Qur'aan and are reverting to Islam, as they perceive the truth of the Divine revelation of the Qur'aan. The Churches in Europe²¹¹ are empty, and entrepreneurs are snapping them up to convert them into hotels, nightclubs and even brothels.

Many churches have also been bought by Islamic organizations that have converted them into Mosques. That is why the evangelists are

210. The missionaries have concocted a 'Furqan'. One finds that they have PLAGIRIZED wholesale from the Qur'aan. Moreover, there will not be even 5 people in the whole world who will be able to memorize the nonsense they have concocted. The Glorious Qur'aan says about these types of people (today it is the missionaries) in chap 26 v 224-226:- *"And the poets,-it is those straying in evil, who follow them: Seest thou not that they wander distracted in every valley?-and that they say what they practice not?"* This false Furqan of theirs begins with "The Father, the Word and the Holy Ghost" which has been expunged by the learned scholars of Christianity as a fabrication and an interpolation.

211. The football grounds are always packed and the Churches are empty. Spectators (majority Christians) go to watch their teams (Priests ?) And they sing songs (hymns) in praise of their teams; and a referee (Pope ?) officiates with a whistle.

brainwashing the Christians with so much Islamaphobia to stop the flood of Christians becoming Muslims.

Muslims will be shocked to read the horrible literature the missionaries are printing and handing out even in primary²¹² schools in South Africa. It shows their desperateness in trying to stop the spread of Islam. However, Allah has already stated that no matter what the kuffar will do, they will not be able to stop His religion from gaining ascendancy. Refer al Qur'aan chap 61, v, 9.

I know that hundreds of people have pointed out 'mistakes and contradictions' in the Qur'aan. Believe me; all of them - 100 percent - are either out of context, misquotations, and mistranslations with which they try to misinform the people. So far no one has been able to take out a single contradiction, or a single mistake in the Qur'aan.

Example: Suppose there is a Sheikh who is very well versed in the history of Islam but is not well acquainted with scientific knowledge, and you inform him that there is a scientific mistake in the Qur'aan which he cannot clarify - just because he cannot clarify that 'alleged scientific mistake' in the Qur'aan, that does not mean that the Qur'aan is not the word of Allah - because the Glorious Qur'aan says in **Surah Furqan, Ch. 25,v.59, that 'ask the person who is well acquainted with those things'**- meaning that if you want to ask about science then ask a scientist, whether Muslim or non-Muslim, and he will clarify what the Qur'aan means in those verses.

Similarly, suppose someone points out an Arabic grammatical mistake in the Qur'aan, which I cannot clarify since, I am not an expert in Arabic; that does not mean that the Qur'aan is wrong. The proper course is to go to an expert in Arabic and he will clarify the meaning. So far nobody has been able to take out a fault in the Qur'aan and insha-Allah no one will ever be able to take out a fault in the Qur'aan. After these logical explanations no human being who believes in a God can say that Qur'aan is not from Allah.

212 They have children's books with stories that the Prophet of Islam was a slave trader (astagfirullah). **The only man in the history of this world, who spoke out against slavery and practically demonstrated this by purchasing with his own money the freedom of hundreds of slaves 1,400 years ago, was the Prophet of Islam!** The prophet liberated humankind from the servitude of idols & human beings to the servitude of One God.

The 3rd basic assumption has been proved that the Glorious Qur'aan is of divine origin and it is from Allah (SWT) without any doubt!

Now it is our duty to prove to the non Muslims the true concept of Allah, and the best definition that I can give of Allah is - **Surah Ikhlāas, Ch. 112, vs. 1 -4: Say: 'He is Allah, the One; Allah the Eternal and Absolute; 'He begets not, nor is He begotten',**(He has no father and mother. He has got no begotten children)... **'And there is nothing like unto Him'**. The moment you compare Allah to anyone, he is not Allah. He is incomparable, period! This is a four-line definition of Allah (SWT).

THE 'THEORY OF PROBABILITY'

The theory called 'Probability': that suppose there are two options and out of those two options one is right and one is wrong. The chances you will get the correct answer will be one out of two. In other words you have a 50% chance of getting the right answer.

1st example: if I toss a coin, the chance that you will guess correctly is one out of two. It is 50%. If I toss a coin the second time, the chances you will be correct the second time is one out of two, is still 50%. But the chances that you will guess correctly both times - first and the second toss- will be one out of two into one out of two, that is one fourth or 50 percent of 50 percent, which is 25 percent.

2nd example- throwing a dice: The dice has got six sides. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6. The chance that I will be correct is one out of six. The chance I will be correct all three times, the first, the second, and the third throw, will be 1 out of 2 into 1 out of 2 into 1 out of 6 (which equals 1 over 24).

Now let us apply this test of probability to the Qur'aan.

No: 1. -The Glorious Qur'aan says that the world is **spherical**. What different shapes can a person think of the earth? Some may say it is flat, some may say it is triangular, quadrangular, 5 sides, (pentagonal) hexagonal, heptagonal, octagonal, and some may say spherical. Let us assume that you can think of about 30 different shapes of the Earth. The chances of being correct if any one makes a wild guess will be 1 upon 30.

No: 2. - Let us take the light of the moon. It can be its own light or it can be reflected light. The chance that one will guess correctly is 1 upon 2 (50%). But the chances that both guesses, that the earth is

spherical and the light of the moon is reflected light, is 1 upon 30 into 1 upon 2, that is 1 upon 60.

No: 3. - In the desert of Arabia a person may make at least 10 thousand guesses of what a human being and all living creatures are made of; and the last that any one will guess in the deserts of Arabia is that human beings and living creatures are made of water. *Yet the Qur'aan says that every living creature is made of water. In Surah Al-Ambiya, Chap 21, v. 30, also in Surah Nur, Chap 24, v. 45, that... 'Every animal is made up of water'. And in Surah Furqaan, Chap 25, v 54, 'Every human being is made of water'.*

If you make a wild guess, the chances that you will be right are 1 upon 10 thousand. The chances that anyone will make 3 guesses and all 3 will be right- that the earth is spherical, that the light of the moon is reflected light, and every living being is made of water will be 1 upon 30 into 1 upon 2 into 1 upon 10 thousand which is 1 upon 60 thousand. It works out to a .00017 percentage. *This translates into almost zero.*

We shall discuss some of the scientific facts that are mentioned in the Qur'aan and I shall leave it upto you, the audience/ readers to decide for yourselves, after applying the theory of probability to the Qur'aan, if any human being could have ever guessed all of the scientific facts correctly 1,400 years ago.

The Qur'aan mentions **hundreds of scientific facts** that were unknown 1,400 years ago. If anyone made guesses the chances that all hundred would be right, will be almost zero; and in the theory of probability, it will be zero. Some may pose the question: Zakir, are you using scientific knowledge to prove the Qur'aan? I would like to remind you that the Qur'aan is not the book of-'s-c-i-e-n-c-e-', but it is a book of '-s-i-g-n-s'. *The Qur'aan has got 6,666 A'yaats or signs. More than 1,000 of them have scientific knowledge.* I am not using science to prove the Qur'aan right, because to prove anything right, we have to use a yardstick. **For Muslims the ultimate yardstick is the Qur'aan.** *Al-Qur'aan is the Al-Furqaan*, the criterion to judge right from the wrong, truth from falsehood, and to weed out of every scripture that claims to be the Word of God the additions and deletions of the false scribes as is mentioned in Chap 2, v. 79 of the Glorious Qur'aan and also as Jesus (pbuh) foretold in Mark 7:7 Matthew 15:9.

However for the atheist who does not believe in God, science is the ultimate yardstick. We also know very well that many times science takes U turns; therefore I will quote scientific facts that have got evidence and have been proven beyond any doubts. I will not talk about theories, which are based on assumptions. I intend to give an objective analysis of the Muslim belief regarding the Divine origin of the Qur'aan, particularly in the light of established scientific discoveries.

There was a time in the history of world civilizations, when 'miracles', or what were perceived to be miracles, took precedence over human reason and logic. Of course, the normal definition of 'miracle' is simply: 'anything that takes place out of the normal course of life and for which humankind has no explanation'.

Any book claiming to be of Divine origin is in effect claiming to be a miracle. Such a claim should be easily verifiable in any age, according to the standards of that age. Muslims believe that the Qur'aan is the last and final revelation of God, the miracle of miracles, revealed as a mercy to mankind. Let us therefore investigate the veracity of this belief and then make our own individual decision to accept or reject the Divineness of the Qur'aan.

THE CHALLENGE OF THE QUR'AAN

Literature and poetry have been instruments of both Muslims and non-Muslims. Scholars agree that the Qur'aan is Arabic literature par excellence. The Qur'aan challenges mankind to produce the likes of it. **"And if ye are in doubt as to what We have revealed from time to time to Our servant, then produce a Surah like thereunto; and call your witnesses or helpers (if there are any) besides Allah, if your (doubts) are true. "But if ye cannot –and of a surety you cannot – then fear the Fire whose fuel is Men and Stones –which is prepared for those who reject Faith."** (Al-Qur'aan 2:23-24)

The challenge of the Qur'aan is to produce a single Surah (chap) like the Surahs it contains. The same challenge is repeated in the Qur'aan several times. A modern rational man, however, would never accept a religious scripture, which says, in the best possible poetic language, that the world is flat. This is because we live in an age where human reason, logic and science are given primacy. Not many would accept the Qur'aan's extraordinarily beautiful language as proof of its Divine origin.

Any scripture claiming to be a divine revelation must also be acceptable on the strength of its own reason and logic. Let us therefore study the Qur'aan, and analyze whether the Qur'aan and Modern Science are compatible or incompatible? The Qur'aan is not a book of Science but a book of 'Signs'- There is over six thousand 'Signs' in the Qur'aan of which more than *a thousand deal with hard core Science*. We all know that many a times Science takes a 'U-turn'. I have considered only established scientific facts and not hypotheses and theories based on mere assumptions and not backed by proof.

ASTRONOMY - THE CREATION OF THE UNIVERSE: 'THE BIG BANG'

Astrophysicists explain the creation of the universe²¹³ as 'The Big Bang'. It is supported by observational and experimental data gathered by astronomers and astrophysicists for decades. According to 'The Big Bang', the whole universe was initially one big mass Primary Nebula and then there was a 'Big Bang' (Secondary Separation), which resulted in the formation of Galaxies. These then divided to form stars, planets, the sun, the moon, etc. *The origin of the universe was unique and the probability of it happening by 'chance' is nil*. The Qur'aan contains the following verse regarding the origin of the universe:

"Do not the Unbelievers see that the heavens and the earth were joined together (as one unit of Creation), before We clove them asunder?" (Al-Qur'an 21:30)

The striking similarity between the Qur'aanic verse and 'The Big Bang' is inescapable! How could a book, which first appeared in the deserts of Arabia 1,400 years ago, contain this profound scientific truth?

INITIAL GASEOUS MASS BEFORE CREATION OF GALAXIES

Scientists agree that before the galaxies in the universe were formed, celestial matter was initially in the form of gaseous matter. In short, huge gaseous matter or clouds were present before the formation of the galaxies. To describe initial celestial matter, the word 'smoke' is more appropriate than gas. The following Qur'aanic verse refers to this state of the universe by the word **dukhaan**, which means smoke.

213 a widely accepted phenomenon by astrophysicists

“Moreover, He Comprehended in His design the sky, and it had been (as) smoke: He said to it and to the earth: ‘Come ye together, willingly or unwillingly.’ They said: ‘We do come (together), in willing obedience.” (Al-Qur’aan 41:11)

Again, this fact is a corollary to the ‘Big Bang’ and was not known to anyone before it was revealed to Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) in the Qur’aan. *What then, could have been the source of this knowledge?*

SHAPE OF THE EARTH IS SPHERICAL

In early times, people believed that the earth was flat. For centuries, they were afraid to venture out too far for fear of falling off the edge! Sir Francis Drake was the first person that proved that the earth is ‘round’ when he sailed around it in 1597.

Consider the following Qur’aanic verse regarding the alternation of day and night: **“Seest thou not that Allah merges night into day and He merges day into night?” (Al-Qur’aan 31:29)** Merging here means that the night slowly and gradually changes to day and vice versa. This phenomenon can only take place if the earth is spherical. If the earth was flat, there would have been a sudden change from night to day and from day to night. The following verse also alludes to the spherical shape of the earth:

“He created the heavens and the earth in true (proportions): He makes the night overlap the day, and the day overlap the night.” (Al-Qur’aan 39:5)

The Arabic word used here is ‘**Kawwara**’ meaning ‘to overlap’ or ‘to coil’ – the way a turban is wound round the head. The overlapping or coiling of the day and night can only take place if the earth is spherical. The earth is not exactly round like a ball, but geo-spherical, i.e. it is flattened at the poles. The following verse *Al-Qur’aan 79:30* describes the earth’s shape:

“And the earth, moreover, hath He made egg shaped.”

The Arabic word for egg here is ‘**dahaa-haa**’ which means an ostrich-egg. The shape of an ostrich-egg resembles the geo-spherical shape of the earth. Thus the Qur’aan correctly describes the shape of the earth, though the prevalent notion when the Qur’aan was revealed was that the earth was flat.

MOONLIGHT IS REFLECTED LIGHT

It was believed by earlier civilizations that the moon emanated its own light. Science now tells us that the light of the moon is reflected light. However this fact was mentioned in the Qur'aan 1,400 years ago in the following verse:

“Blessed is He Who made Constellations in the skies, and placed therein a Lamp and a Moon giving light.” (*Al-Qur'aan 25:61*)

The Arabic word for the sun in the Qur'aan is 'shams'. It is also referred to as 'siraaj' that means a 'torch' or as 'wahhaaj' meaning 'a blazing lamp' or as 'diya' which means 'shining glory'. All three descriptions are appropriate to the sun, since it generates intense heat and light by its internal combustion. The Arabic word for the moon is 'qamar' and it is described in the Qur'aan as 'muneer' which is a body that gives off reflected light. Again, the Qur'aanic description matches perfectly with the true nature of the moon that does not give off light by itself but it is an inactive body that reflects the light of the sun. Not once in the Qur'aan is the moon mentioned as 'siraaj, wahhaaj or diya', nor the sun as 'noor or muneer'. This implies that the Qur'aan recognizes the difference between the nature of sunlight and moonlight. The following verses relate to the nature of light from the sun and the moon:

“It is He who made the sun to be a shining glory and the moon to be a light (of beauty) and measured out stages for her; that you might know the number of years and the count (of time). Nowise did Allah create this but in truth and righteousness. (Thus) He explains His signs in detail, for those who understand.” (*Al-Qur'aan 10:5*)

“See ye not how Allah has created the seven heavens one above another, “And made the moon a light in their midst, and made the sun as a (Glorious) Lamp?” (*Al-Qur'aan 71:15-16*)

The Glorious Qur'aan and modern science are thus in perfect agreement about the differences in the nature of sunlight and moonlight. Scientists are discovering facts today what the Qur'aan – Allah's word- has stated over 1,400 years ago.

In Surah Ar Rahman, chap 55 verse 5 Allah informs us that the sun and the moon follow exact computed courses. Today the scientists have proven this by being able to work out the 'rising' and setting' of the sun, as well as the 'birth' of the moon, full moon decades ahead. If

one goes to anywhere in the world the times of the 5 daily Salaah are worked out in calendar form.

“The sun and the moon follow courses (exactly) computed” (calculated, reckoned). Surah Rahman, chap. 55 verse 5

THE SUN ROTATES

For a long time European philosophers and scientists believed that the earth stood still in the centre of the universe, and every other body including the sun moved around it. In the west, this geocentric concept of the universe was prevalent right from the time of Ptolemy in the second century B.C. In 1512, Nicholas Copernicus put forward his Heliocentric Theory of Planetary Motion, which asserted that the sun is motionless at the centre of the solar system with the planets revolving around it. In 1609, the German scientist Yohannus Keppler published the ‘Astronomia Nova’. In this he concluded that not only do the planets move in elliptical orbits around the sun, they also rotate upon their axes at irregular speeds. With this knowledge it became possible for European scientists to explain correctly many of the mechanisms of the solar system, including the sequence of night and day. After these discoveries, it was thought that the Sun was stationary and did not rotate about its axis like the Earth. I remember having studied this fallacy from Geography books during my school days. Consider the following Qur’aanic verse: **“It is He Who created the Night and the Day, and the sun and the moon: All (the celestial bodies) swim along, each in its rounded course.” (Al-Qur’aan 21:33)**

The Arabic word used in the above verse is ‘**yasbahoon**’. This word is derived from the word ‘sabaha’. It carries with it the idea of motion that comes from any moving body. Similarly, if you use the word ‘yasbah’ for a celestial body such as the sun, it would not only mean that it is flying through space but would also mean that it is rotating as it goes through space. Most school textbooks have now incorporated the fact that the sun rotates about its axis.

The rotation of the sun about its own axis can be proved with the help of equipment that projects the image of the sun on the top of a table, so that one can examine the image of the sun without being blinded. It is noticed that the sun has spots which complete a circular motion once every 25 days i.e. the sun takes approximately 25 days to rotate round its axis. *The sun travels through space at roughly 240 km per*

second, and takes about 200 million years to complete one revolution around the centre of our Milky Way Galaxy.

“It is not permitted to the Sun to catch up the Moon, nor can the Night outstrip the Day: Each (just) swims along in (its own) orbit (according to Law).” (*Al-Qur’aan 36:40*)

“The sun and the moon follow courses exactly computed²¹⁴”
(*Al-Qur’aan: chap 55, v. 5*)

Both verses mention essential facts discovered only recently by modern astronomy, i.e. the existence of the individual orbits of the Sun and the Moon, and their journey through space with their own motion. The ‘fixed place’, towards which the sun travels, carrying with it the solar system, has been located precisely by modern astronomy. It has been given a name: the Solar Apex. The solar system is indeed moving in space towards a point situated in the constellation of Hercules (alpha Lyrae) whose exact location is now firmly established. The moon rotates around its axis in the same duration that it takes to revolve around the earth. It takes approximately 29½ days to complete one rotation.

One can see that the use of the lunar calendar is superior to that of the Gregorian calendar, as it is more accurate in the number of days per month. Should we not ponder: “Where did the source of knowledge contained in the Qur’aan come from?”

THE EXPANDING UNIVERSE

In 1925, American astronomer Edwin Hubble provided observational evidence that all galaxies are moving away from one another, which implies that the universe is expanding. The expansion of the universe is now an established scientific fact. This is what the Qur’aan says regarding the nature of the universe: **“With power and skill did We construct the Firmament: For it is We Who create the vastness (expanse) of Space.”** (*Al-Qur’aan 51:47*) The Arabic word ‘**musioon**’ is correctly translated as ‘expanding it’, and it refers to the creation of the expanding vastness of the universe.

214 Scientists can predict exactly the times of ‘sunrise and sun sets’ in any given place for decades in advance. One cannot help but be amazed at the scientific accuracy of the Qur’aanic verses.

One of the greatest astrophysicists Stephen Hawking, in his book, 'A Brief History of Time', says, "The discovery that the universe is expanding was one of the great intellectual revolutions of the 20th century." *The Qur'aan mentioned the expansion of the universe, before man even learnt to build a telescope!*

Some may say that the presence of astronomical facts in the Qur'aan is not surprising since the Arabs were advanced in the field of astronomy. They are correct in acknowledging the advancement of the Arabs in the field of astronomy, but what they fail to realize is that the Qur'aan was revealed centuries before the Arabs excelled in astronomy. Moreover, the Arabs even at the peak of their scientific advancement did not know many of the scientific facts mentioned above, such as the origin of the universe with a Big Bang. The scientific facts mentioned in the Qur'aan are therefore not due to the Arabs' advancement in astronomy: indeed the reverse is true: they advanced in astronomy because astronomy occupies a place in the Qur'aan.

**BOTANY-PLANTS HAVE MALE AND FEMALE & EVERYTHING
MADE IN PAIRS**

"And has sent down water from the sky, with it have We produced diverse pairs of plants each separate from the others."

(Al-Qur'aan 20:53)

"And of everything We have created pairs." (Al-Qur'aan 51:49)

"Glory to Allah, Who created in pairs all things that the earth produces, as well as their own (human) kind and (other) things of which they have no knowledge" (Al-Qur'aan 36:36)

Previously, humans did not know that plants too have male and female gender distinctions. Botany states that every plant has a male and female gender. This verse establishes a great scientific truth that pairs exist in all creation, even in the vegetable kingdom and in things that had not yet come to the knowledge of man; but will come to his knowledge in the future. The Arabs certainly did not know this when the Qur'aan was revealed, but modern research corroborates this truth.

THE BEE AND ITS SKILL

“And thy Lord taught the Bee to build its cells in hills, on trees, and in (men’s) habitations; then to eat of all the produce (of the earth), and find with skill the spacious paths of its Lord.”
(Al-Qur’aan 16:68-69).

Von-Frisch received the Nobel Prize in 1973 for his research on the behaviour and communication of the bees. The bee, after discovering any new garden or flower, goes back and tells its fellow bees the exact direction, and maps out how to get there, which is known as ‘bee dance’. The meanings of this insect’s movements that are intended to transmit information between worker bees have been discovered scientifically using photography and other methods. The Qur’aan mentions in the above verses how the bee with its skill, finds the spacious paths of its Lord.

The gender used for the bee in the above verses is the female gender (fa’slukî and kulî), indicating that the bee that leaves its home for gathering food is a female bee. In other words, the soldier or worker bee is a female bee.

In Shakespeare’s play ‘Henry the Fourth’, some of the characters speak about bees and mention that the bees are soldiers and that they have a king. In other words the people in Shakespearean times thought that the worker bees were *male* bees and they went home and were answerable to a king bee. This, however, is not true. The worker bees are *females* and they do not report to a king bee but to a *queen bee*. However it took modern investigations in the last 300 years to discover what is said in the Qur’aan 1,400 ears ago.

MEDICINE-HONEY: HEALING FOR HUMANKIND

The bee assimilates juices of various kinds of flowers and fruit and forms honey within its body, which it stores in its cells of wax. Only a couple of centuries ago humans came to know that honey come from the belly of the bee. But this fact was mentioned in the Qur’aan 1,400 years ago in the following verse:

“There issues from within their bodies a drink of varying colours, wherein is healing for men.” *(Al-Qur’aan 16:69)*

We are only recently aware of the fact that honey has healing properties and is also a mild antiseptic. The Russians used honey to cover their wounds in World War II. The wound would retain

moisture and would leave very little scar tissue. Due to the density of honey, no fungus or bacteria could grow in the wound. Dramatic improvements were visible in 22 incurable chest and Alzheimer's disease patients at nursing Homes in England who were treated by Sister Carole, a nun, with propolis, a substance which bees produce to seal hives against bacteria. A person suffering from an allergy of a particular plant may be given honey from that plant so that the person develops resistance to that allergy. Honey is also rich in fructose and vitamin K. The knowledge contained in the Qur'aan regarding honey, its origin and properties was discovered centuries after its revelation.

EMBRYOLOGY - MUSLIMS SEEK ANSWERS

A group of Muslim Scholars, under the direction of an eminent Yemeni Scholar, Sheikh Abdul Majid Azzindani, collected information concerning embryology and other sciences in the Qur'aan and undisputed Hadith and translated it into English. They then followed the Qur'aanic advice: **"If ye realise this not, ask of those who possess the Message."** (*Al-Qur'aan 16:43 & 21:7*)

All the information from the Qur'aan and the undisputed Hadith concerning embryology so gathered was presented to Prof. (Dr.) Keith Moore, who is a Professor of Embryology and Chairman of the Department of Anatomy at the University of Toronto, in Canada. At present he is one of the highest authorities in the field of Embryology. He was asked to give his opinion regarding the material presented to him. After carefully examining it, Dr. Moore said that most of the information concerning embryology mentioned in the Qur'aan and the undisputed Hadith is in perfect conformity with modern discoveries in the field of embryology and does not conflict with them in any way. He added that there were a few verses however, on whose scientific accuracy he could not comment. He could not say whether the statements were true or false, *since he was himself unaware of the information contained therein*. There was also no mention of this information in modern writings and studies on embryology. One such verse is (The very first revelation):

"Proclaim! (Read!) In the name of thy Lord and Cherisher, Who created - Created man, out of a (mere) clot of congealed blood." (*Al-Qur'aan 96:1-2*)

The Arabic word '**alaq**' besides meaning a congealed clot of blood also means something that clings, a leech-like substance. Dr. Keith Moore had no knowledge whether an embryo in the initial stages appears like a leech. To verify this he studied the initial stage of the embryo under a very powerful microscope and compared what he observed with the diagram of a leech. He was astonished at the striking resemblance between the two! *In the similar manner, he acquired more information from the Qur'aan on embryology that was hitherto not known to him.* Dr. Keith Moore answered about eighty questions dealing with embryological data mentioned in the Qur'aan and Hadith. Noting that the information contained in the Qur'aan and Hadith was in full agreement with the latest discoveries in the field of embryology, **Prof. Moore said, "If I was asked these questions thirty years ago, I would not have been able to answer half of them for lack of scientific information".**

In 1981, during the Seventh Medical Conference in Dammam, Saudi Arabia, Dr. Moore said, *"It has been a great pleasure for me to help clarify statements in the Qur'aan about human development. It is clear to me that these statements must have come to Muhammed (pbuh) from Allah, because almost all of this knowledge was not discovered until many centuries later. This proves to me that Muhammed (pbuh) must have been a messenger of God or Allah as the Muslims call Him".*

Dr. Keith Moore had earlier authored the book, 'The Developing Human'. After acquiring new knowledge from the Qur'aan, he wrote in 1982 the 3rd edition of the same book - 'The Developing Human', incorporating the information gleaned from the Glorious Qur'aan. The book was the recipient of an award for the best medical book written by a single author. It has been translated into several major languages of the world and is used as a textbook of embryology in the first year of medical studies.

Dr. Joe Leigh Simpson, Chairman of the Department of Obstetrics and Gynecology, at the Baylor College of Medicine, Houston, U.S.A., proclaims: "...these Hadiths, sayings of Muhammed, could not have been obtained on the basis of the scientific knowledge that was available at the time of the writer (implying in the 7th century). It follows that not only is there no conflict between genetics and religion (implying Islam) but in fact religion (Islam) may guide science by adding revelation to some of the traditional scientific approaches . . . there exist statements in the Qur'aan shown centuries

later to be valid which support knowledge in the Qur'aan having been derived from God."

DROP EMITTED FROM BETWEEN THE BACK BONE & THE RIBS

"Now let man but think from what he is created! He is created from a drop emitted - Proceeding from between the back bone and the ribs." (Al-Qur'aan 86:5-7)

In embryonic stages, the reproductive organs of the male and female, i.e. the testicles and the ovaries, begin their development near the kidney between the spinal column and the eleventh and twelfth ribs. Later they descend; the female gonads (ovaries) stop in the pelvis while the male gonads (testicles) continue their descent before birth to reach the scrotum through the inguinal canal. Even in adulthood after the descent of the reproductive organs, these organs receive their nerve and blood supply from the Abdominal Aorta, which is in the area between the backbone (spinal column) and the ribs. The lymphatic drainage and the venous return also go to the same area. This is also a recent scientific discovery.

NUTFAH - MINUTE QUANTITY OF LIQUID

The Glorious Qur'aan mentions no less than eleven times including 22:5 and 23:13 that the human being is created from nutfah, which means a minute quantity of liquid or a trickle of liquid that remains after emptying a cup. Science has confirmed in recent times that only one out of an average of three million sperms is required for fertilizing the ovum. This means that only 1/3 millionth part or 0.00003% of the quantity of sperms that are emitted is required for fertilization.

SULALAH - QUINTESSENCE OF LIQUID

"And made his progeny from a quintessence of the nature of a fluid despised" (Al-Qur'aan 32:8)

The Arabic word sulaalah means quintessence or the best part of a whole. We have come to know now that only one single spermatozoon that penetrates the ovum is required for fertilization, out of the several million produced by man. That one spermatozoon out of several millions is referred to in the Qur'aan as sulaalah. We have also come to know now that only one ovum is fertilized out of the tens of thousand produced by the female. That one ovum out of tens of thousand is also referred to in the Qur'aan as Sulaalah. This

word also means gentle extraction from a fluid. The fluid refers to both male and female germinal fluids containing gametes. Both ovum and sperm are gently extracted from their environments in the process of fertilization. **‘Nutfatun amshaaj’** – mingled liquids: *(Al-Qur’aan 76:2)* : **“Verily We created man from a drop of mingled sperm.”**

The Arabic word **‘nutfatin amshaajin’** means ‘mingled liquids’. According to commentators of the Qur’aan- mingled liquids refers to the male or female agents or liquids. After mixture of male and female gamete, the zygote still remains **nutfah**. Mingled liquids can also refer to spermatic fluid that is formed of various secretions that come from various glands. Therefore, **nutfatin-amshaaj**, i.e. a minute quantity of mingled fluids refers to the male and female gametes (germinal fluids or cells) and part of the surrounding fluids.

SEX DETERMINATION

The sex of a foetus is determined by the nature of the sperm and not of the ovum. The sex of the child, whether female or male, depends on whether the 23rd pair of chromosomes is XX or XY respectively. Primarily, sex determination occurs at fertilization and depends upon the type of sex chromosome in the sperm that fertilizes an ovum. If it is an ‘X’ bearing sperm that fertilizes the ovum, the foetus is a female and if it is a ‘Y’ bearing sperm then the foetus is a male. **“That He did create in pairs – male and female, from a seed when lodged (in its place).”** *(Al-Qur’aan 53:45-46)*

The Arabic word **nutfah** means a minute quantity of liquid and **tumnaa** means ejaculated or planted. Therefore **nutfah** specifically refers to sperm because it is ejaculated. The Qur’aan says in: *(Al-Qur’aan 75:37-39)*:

“Was he not a drop of sperm emitted (in lowly form)? Then did he become a clinging clot; then did (Allah) make and fashion (him) in due proportion. And of him He made two sexes, male and female.”

Here again it is mentioned that a small quantity (drop) of sperm (indicated by the word nutfatan min maniyyin) that comes from the man is responsible for the sex of the foetus. Mothers-in-law in the Indian subcontinent usually prefer having male grandchildren and often blame their daughters-in-law if the child is not a boy. If only they knew that the determining factor is the nature of the male sperm and not the female ovum! If they were to blame anybody, they should

rather blame their sons, not their daughters-in-law, since both the Qur'aan and Science prove that it is the male fluid that is responsible for the sex of the child!

FOETUS PROTECTED BY THREE VEILS OF DARKNESS

"He makes you, in the wombs of your mothers, in stages, one after another, in three veils of darkness." (*Al-Qur'aan 39:6*) According to Prof. Keith Moore, these three veils of darkness in the Qur'aan refer to: (i) anterior abdominal wall of the mother (ii) the uterine wall (iii) the amnio-chorionic membrane.

EMBRYOLOGICAL STAGES

"Man We did create from a quintessence (of clay); then We placed him as (a drop of) sperm in a place of rest, firmly fixed; then We made the sperm into a clot of congealed blood; then of that clot We made a (foetus) lump; then We made out of that lump bones and clothed the bones with flesh; then We developed out of it another creature. So blessed be Allah, the Best to create!" (*Qur' an 23:12-14*)

In this verse Allah states that man is created from a small quantity of liquid, which is placed in a place of rest, firmly fixed (well established or lodged) for which the Arabic word **qaraarin makeen** is used. The uterus is well protected from the posterior by the spinal column supported firmly by the back muscles. The amniotic sac containing the amniotic fluid further protects the embryo. Thus the foetus has a well-protected dwelling place. This small quantity of fluid is made into **alaqah**, meaning something that clings. It also means a leech-like substance. Both descriptions are scientifically acceptable as in the very early stages the foetus clings to the wall and also appears to resemble the leech in shape. It also behaves like a leech (*blood sucker*) and acquires its blood supply from the mother through the placenta. The third meaning of the word **alaqah** is a blood clot. During this **alaqah** stage, this spans the third and fourth week of pregnancy, the blood clots within closed vessels. Hence the embryo acquires the appearance of a blood clot in addition to acquiring the appearance of a leech.

Compare the readily available Qur'aanic knowledge with man's struggle with scientific findings: In 1677, Hamm and Leeuwenhoek were the first scientists to observe human sperm cells (spermatozoa) through a microscope. They thought that a sperm cell contained a miniature human being that grew in the uterus to form a newborn.

This was known as the 'perforation theory'. When scientists discovered that the ovum was bigger than the sperm, it was thought by scientists like De Graf and others that the foetus existed in a miniature form in the ovum. Later, in the 18th century, Maupertuis propagated the theory of biparental inheritance.

The '**aldaqah**' is transformed into '**mudghah**' which means 'something that is chewed (having teeth marks)' and also something that is tacky and small which can be put in the mouth like gum. Both these explanations are scientifically correct. Prof. Keith Moore took a piece of plaster seal and made it into the size and shape of the early stage of foetus and chewed it between the teeth to make it into a '**mudghah**'. He compared this with the photographs of the early stage of foetus. The teeth marks resembled the '**somites**', which is the early formation of the spinal column. This '**mudghah**' is transformed into bones (**izâm**). The bones are clothed with intact flesh or muscles (**lahm**). Then Allah makes it into another creature.

Prof. Marshall Johnson who is one of the leading scientists in the USA, and is the head of the Department of Anatomy and Director of the Daniel Institute at the Thomas Jefferson University in Philadelphia in the USA, was asked to comment on the verses of the Qur'aan dealing with embryology. He said that the verses of the Qur'aan describing the embryological stages could not be a coincidence. Later he said: "I see nothing here in conflict with the concept that Divine intervention was involved when Muhammed (pbuh) recited the Qur'aan."

According to Dr. Keith Moore, the modern classification of embryonic development stages which is adopted throughout the world, is not easily comprehensible, since it identifies stages on a numerical basis i.e. stage 1, stage 2, etc. On the other hand, the divisions revealed in the Qur'aan are based on distinct and easily identifiable forms or shapes, which the embryo passes through. These are based on different phases of pre-natal development and provide elegant scientific descriptions that are comprehensible and practical.

Embryological stages of human development have also been described in the following verses: **"Was he not a drop of sperm emitted (in lowly form)? Then did he become a clinging clot; then did (Allah) make and fashion (him) in due proportion. And of him He made two sexes, male and female."** (*Al-Qur'aan* 75:37-39)

“...Who created thee, fashioned thee in due proportion, and gave thee a just bias; in whatever form He wills, does He put thee together.” (Al-Qur’aan 82:7-8)

EMBRYO PARTLY FORMED AND PARTLY UNFORMED

At the mudghah stage, if an incision is made in the embryo and the internal organ is dissected, it will be seen that most of them are formed while the remaining are not yet completely formed. According to Prof. Johnson, if we describe the embryo as a complete creation, then we are only describing that part which is already created. If we describe it as an incomplete creation, then we are only describing that part which is not yet created. So, is it a complete creation or an incomplete creation?

There is no better description of this stage of embryo genesis than the Qur’aanic description, “partly formed and partly unformed”, as in the following verse: **“We created you out of dust, then out of sperm, then out of a leech-like clot, then out of a morsel of flesh, partly formed and partly unformed that We may manifest (Our Power) to you.” (Al-Qur’aan 22:5)** Scientifically we know that at this early stage of development there are some cells which are differentiated and there are some cells that are undifferentiated - some organs are formed and yet others unformed.

SENSE OF HEARING AND SIGHT

The first sense to develop in a developing human embryo is hearing. The foetus can hear sounds after the 24th week. Subsequently, the sense of sight is developed and by the 28th week, the retina becomes sensitive to light. The Qur’aan explains it thus:

“And He gave you (the faculties of) hearing and sight and feeling (and understanding).” (Al-Qur’aan 32:9) **“Verily We created man from a drop of mingled sperm, in order to try him: so We gave him (the gifts), of hearing and sight.” (Qur’aan 76:2)** **“It is He Who has created for you (the faculties of) hearing, sight, feeling and understanding: little thanks it is ye give!” (Qur’aan 23:78)**

In all these verses the sense of **hearing** is mentioned before that of sight. Thus the Qur’aanic description matches perfectly with the recent discoveries in modern embryology.

GENERAL SCIENCE FINGERPRINTS

“Does man think that We cannot assemble his bones?

Nay, We are able to put together in perfect order the very tips of his fingers.” (Al-Qur’aan 75:3-4)

Unbelievers dispute regarding resurrection-taking place after bones of dead people have disintegrated in the earth and how each individual would be identified on the Day of Judgement. Almighty Allah answers that He can not only reassemble our bones but can also reconstruct perfectly our very fingertips. *Why does the Qur’aan, while speaking about determination of the identity of the individual, speak specifically about fingertips?* In 1880, fingerprinting became the scientific method of identification, after research done by Sir Francis Golt. No two persons in the world can ever have exactly the same fingerprint pattern, not even identical twins. That is the reason why police forces worldwide use fingerprints to identify criminals.

Fourteen hundred years ago, who could have known the uniqueness of each human’s fingerprint? Surely it could have been none other than the Creator Himself! *Does it not make one ask:* where did all this knowledge originate when reading all of the above scientific knowledge from the Qur’aan?

PAIN RECEPTORS IN THE SKIN

It was thought that the sense of feeling and pain was dependent only on the brain. Recent discoveries however prove that there are pain receptors present in the skin, without which a person would not be able to feel pain. When a doctor examines a patient suffering from burn injuries, he verifies the degree of burns by a pinprick. If the patient feels pain, the doctor is pleased, because it indicates that the burns are superficial and the pain receptors are intact. On the other hand, if the patient does not feel any pain, it indicates that it is a deep burn and the pain receptors have been destroyed. The Qur’aan gives a clear indication of the existence of pain receptors in the following verse: **“Those who reject our signs, We shall soon cast into the Fire; as often as their skins are roasted through, We shall change them for fresh skins, that they may taste the Penalty: for Allah is Exalted in Power, Wise.” (Al-Qur’aan 4:56)**

Prof. Tagatat Tejasen, Chairman of the Department of Anatomy at Chiang Mai University in Thailand, has spent a great amount of time on research of pain receptors. Initially he could not believe that the Qur'aan mentioned this scientific fact 1,400 years ago, and refused to accept it. He later verified the translation of this particular Qur'aanic verse. Prof. Tejasen was so impressed by the scientific accuracy of the Qur'aanic verse, that at the 8th Saudi Medical Conference held in Riyadh on the Scientific Signs of Qur'aan and Sunnah, he proudly proclaimed in public: "There is no God but Allah and Muhammed (pbuh) is His messenger."

CONCLUSION

To attribute the presence of scientific facts in the Qur'aan to coincidence would be against common sense and a true scientific approach. Indeed the scientific accuracy of the Qur'aanic verses confirms the Qur'aan's open declaration. **"Soon will We show them Our Signs in the (furthest) regions (of the earth), and in their own souls, until it becomes manifest to them that this is the Truth; is it not enough that Thy Lord doth witness all things?" (Al-Qur'aan 41:53)** The Qur'aan invites all humans to reflect on the Creation of this universe in the verse: **"Behold! In the creation of the heavens and the earth, and the alternation of Night and Day - there are indeed Signs for men of understanding." (Al-Qur'aan 3:190)**

The scientific evidences of the Qur'aan clearly prove its Divine origin. No human being could have produced a book fourteen hundred years ago, which could contain such profound scientific facts that are discovered in the 20th and 21st centuries.

The Qur'aan, however, is not a book of Science but a book of 'Signs'. These signs invite humankind to realize the purpose of his existence on earth, and to live in harmony with nature. The Qur'aan is truly a message from Allah, the Creator and Sustainer of the universe. It contains the same Message of the Oneness of God that was preached by all Prophets, right from Adam, Moses (pbuh), and Jesus (pbuh) to Muhammed (pbut). Several detailed tomes have been written on the subject of Qur'aan and modern science and further research in this field is ongoing. Inshallah, this research will help mankind to come closer to the Word of the Almighty. This book contains only a few of the scientific facts mentioned in the Qur'aan. Prof. Tejasen accepted Islam on the strength of just one scientific 'sign' mentioned in the

Qur'an. Some people may require ten signs while some may require hundred signs to be convinced about the Divine origin of the Qur'aan. Some would be unwilling to accept the Truth even after being shown a thousand signs. The Qur'aan condemns such a closed mentality in the verse: **"Deaf, dumb and blind, they will not return (To the path)."** (Al-Qur'aan 2:18)

The Qur'aan is a manual for the human beings and contains a complete code of life for the individual and society. Alhamdulillah (Praise be to Allah), the Qur'aanic way of life is far superior to the 'isms' that modern man has invented out of sheer ignorance. Only the Creator Himself can give the best guidance, and the Qur'aan is the Creator's guidance. Allah says in the Qur'aan: "Verily We have revealed the Reminder (Qur'aan) and certainly We shall be its guardian". (Qur'aan 15:19) "Do they not ponder over the Qur'aan? Had it been from anyone besides Allah, they would have found therein many a discrepancy. (Glorious Qur'aan 4:82) "Indeed We have brought the truth to you, but most of you have a hatred for the truth". (Glorious Qur'aan 43:78) "And who does greater wrong than he who is reminded of the revelations of his Lord, then turns away from them? WE shall requite the guilty! (Glorious Qur'aan 32 verse 22) "...Nothing have We omitted from the Book, and they all shall be gathered before their Lord in the end". (Al-Qur'aan 6 v, 38)

From the foregoing, it is very clear that the Glorious Qur'aan is guiding the scientific community in unraveling the secrets of the universe and in all other fields. Thus, Islam through the Glorious Qur'aan can be classed as a 'friend' of science, whereas all other religious scriptures are enemies to science, as the knowledge contained in those scriptures are against science, logic, reason and intelligence. The Qur'aan deals with every issue that one can imagine. Read it yourself to appreciate the greatness of the Word of Allah- Al Qur'aan!

After applying this theory of 'Probability' to the Glorious Qur'aan and after analyzing all of the above proofs that have been presented, it will be **almost zero**, and any reasonable person will have no objection in accepting that the Qur'aan is a revelation from the Almighty Allah.

Dr. A. K. Zakir Naik

CHAPTER SIX

ANALYSIS OF THE BIBLE AND THE JEWS - by Mr. Ebrahim.

When the Greeks conquered Palestine, the women of the Children of Israel were raped by the Greeks, which caused their offspring to become known as the 'Sons of Darkness'. These '**Sons of Darkness**' later on succeeded to influence the Greeks with their *evil interest system* that corrupted the entire Greek economic system. Historians agree that the pagan Persians could possibly have been the first of the invaders to destroy the Children of Israel's Holy Books. *History bears witness that the Jews had no Jewish²¹⁵ messengers with divine guidance.* They had the opportunity to follow the last Israelite prophet Jesus (pbuh) but they rejected him. The statement that the last book of the Old Testament was revealed about 397 BC cannot be relied upon, as there is *no solid evidence* to support it. The fact that the books of the Children of Israel were lost could be one of the reasons why the Jews strayed totally from the Divine Path.

The claim that they relied on the Old Testament has to be rejected, as it is known that the Old Testament was only reconstructed long after Jesus (pbuh). The words Pentateuch and Bible are both Greek words and are consequently not divine.

It is, however, significant to note that a prominent Jewish editor, **Dr. J.H.Hertz, (Late chief Rabbi of the British Empire)** in his works 'The Pentateuch and Haftorahs', 1961, refers to it as the 'Bible'- which includes the Torah (Pentateuch) and Haftorahs [Haftorahs = the prophets].

He says: "It is known in history that the original name of the book, which was revealed to the early Jews long before 250 BC, is lost and there is also no divine evidence from which the Jews and Christians can produce their own source, which says what their book was called. Fortunately for them the name of Moses book was revealed to the last Prophet of Islâm and is referred to in the Glorious Qur'ân as at-Taurât, which sounds very similar to the word "Torah". Were

215 The Prophets were Israelite Prophets from the Bani Israel. When they rejected Jesus (pbuh) they were driven out of their land and dispersed throughout the world. They still have the opportunity today to follow the last and final messenger, Muhammed (pbuh) otherwise they will surely be the losers in the hereafter.

it not for this reference the Jews would have had no divine evidence that their holy book of Moses was called at-Taurâh.

“This view must be accepted and only if any divine evidence to the contrary is presented can anyone be convinced not to regard it as such. The Jews follow the Christians, concerning the name of the Bible. However, it appears that the Jews do not agree with the Greek word Pentateuch, as they believe that ‘it is far more than a code of law: it is the Torah.’²¹⁶ This shows that the Jews are not in agreement with the Christians’ translation of it, although it is from Christian origin”. Edited by Dr. J. H. Hertz, p. 1050 –

This new Jewish culture caused the change in the Greeks’ lifestyle that resulted in the ‘barbarian anarchy’ while they were ruling over the ‘Sons of Darkness’. It is claimed that the main period of the development of the pagan Greeks was between the years 332 to 100 BC, when the Ptolemies ruled the ‘Sons of Darkness’. Before they were corrupted by the Sons of Darkness’ influences, the Greeks were decent people amongst themselves.

The Jewish and Christian claims that the Septuagint was the first Greek translation cannot be accepted, as no evidence exists of a Bible in another language before the Septuagint from which a translation could have been made. The Septuagint can therefore not be regarded as an authentic translation, if indeed it really existed. *There is no tangible historical evidence of a Bible that existed before the Septuagint and also the Septuagint itself.* Also the inference that the Septuagint was constructed not too long after the last book of the Old Testament was revealed cannot be accepted. If it were so, then it would have been easy to re-construct the Septuagint accurately without those statements which Christian scholars regard as not correct. Their claim concerning the period in which the Septuagint was constructed is also doubtful. The time period 332 to 100 BC cannot be accepted as exact or true. Indubitably, their motivation is to point out the supposed divine links between the two documents. But this move on their part is certainly questionable!

The Jewish religious book (The Greek Septuagint) could have been constructed from ideas, which they thought should be the words of God. The Old Testament was already destroyed when the Greeks entered the East before the ‘barbarian anarchy’ set in. It was during

216 : Hertz, p.1 - 1961

this period of the 'barbarian anarchy' referred to, that the '**Rabbinic Judaism's' birth began**. It is possible that St Paul 'nullified' the reconstructed Torah, as claimed by Paul Johnson. However, the reasons for its disappearance are not mentioned in any history book. Could it be that the Jews did not like the contents of it? Paul Johnson appears to have another view. *No claim has yet been made by the Church that the Bible, as it exists today in its present form is an original revelation.*

Reliance had to be placed on the works of Jewish and Christian historians and the Biblical sources, which they produced. These sources were "*fragments and portions*" supposedly of the original Bible that were found and reconstructed by the Textual Critics in *different eras* of Biblical history. *Whenever the Christians and Jews refer to translations concerning the Bible - it is clear from history that they do not refer to translations from the original divine manuscripts, but to translations of revised versions [meaning changed versions] constructed by them.*

When reference is made to the languages of the Bible, it could refer to Hebrew, Aramaic, Greek, and Latin. Yet historically from a Jewish and Christian viewpoint

"Hebrew²¹⁷" and Aramaic appear to be the only languages spoken by the Israelite prophets. (Descendants of Isaac - p.b.u. them)

The Greek or Latin languages were never spoken by any of the Israelite prophets (p.b.u. them). It was also not a divine instruction for the Greek or Latin languages to be used for the recording of the Israelite prophets' (p.b.u. them) divine messages. In the case of Moses (pbuh) however, what should be understood is that Pharaoh would never have allowed a slave language to be spoken in his household²¹⁸. Moses (pbuh) grew up in the household of Pharaoh since a baby, so he must have been taught the Egyptian tongue since childhood; and he must have spoken the Egyptian language.

The revelation that came to Moses (pbuh) must also have been in the Egyptian language and not Hebrew! This fact challenges the

217 'Hebrew' is a Greek word- refer to Oxford Dictionary 3rd S.A.Edition, page 416.

218 : The trend has always been that the nation that conquers will impose its language on the conquered. *Examples*: South Africa: Dutch forced the indigenous people of the Cape to speak their language, which became known as Afrikaans. In Egypt, when the Bani Israel was the slaves of the Egyptians they had to speak Egyptian. South America - they speak Spanish. Algeria, Ivory Coast - they speak French and so on.

fabricated claim that 'the Torah was hand-copied close to 3,000 years in the Hebrew language before it went to the first print.' Moreover, from historical evidence it is clear that the languages of the other Israelite prophets (the descendants of Isaac - p.b.u. them) could have been Egyptian, "Hebrew" and Aramaic. The "Hebrew" and Aramaic languages were also of an unknown dialect in different periods of time of which no records exist.

Fundamental Question to clarify the authenticity of the Bibles in existence! Would God reveal Divine information to His messengers (p.b.u. them) in languages foreign to them? The Christian missionaries will not truthfully answer this question as they realise the consequence of answering this very important question. It will expose the falsehood of their Bibles!

This question is answered in the Glorious Qur'aan "And We sent no messenger but with the language of his people, so that he might explain to them clearly." (Al-Qur'ân 14:4)

Surprisingly the Septuagint (Greek version) appears to be the first recording according to Christian information. For the Jews and the Christians, the Septuagint was known to be the oldest of the Scriptures although it is lost. ***However, only the name of it, Septuagint is known but no original book of it was ever found. The Massoretic text of 916 CE was the oldest before the Dead Sea scrolls were discovered in 1947. The world is still waiting for the text to be released of these Dead Sea documents after 59 years (2006).*** Perhaps they are again concocting a new scripture?

It is God Who has given humankind the ability to formulate languages in order to communicate with one another. The reason why every Messenger of God spoke in the language that his people could understand was because every language is based on the culture of a people. Therefore, to translate such messages one has to study the culture of a people in order to understand certain meanings of words that were in use at the time and which were developed through cultural habits.

However, if such messages no longer exist in its original form, then it would not be possible to verify whether such translations are true or not. ***It is most important that the original message must be used to translate God's words. If it is not possible to find it, then the message is lost.*** However, God knew this would be the case and so He did not allow such a state to prevail.

It is for this reason that he chose to send His complete and finalised message in a language that will remain in use for all time. Moreover, He went a step further; He also guaranteed that the complete and finalised message would be such that it will be possible *for people to memorize His final message in its entirety. And the Glorious Qur'aan in Arabic is the only revelation that can be memorized by children as young as six years old to people as old as 80 years.*

A further miracle of this Qur'aan is that people of every nation on earth who do not speak or understand Arabic can memorize it's every letter! No other Scripture can declare this.

The Roman Catholic Church has issued the following statement regarding the Glorious Qur'aan: "Over the centuries, many theories have been offered as to the origin of the Qur'aan... Today no sensible man accepts any of these theories."! Here is an age old Catholic Church that has been around for centuries, a vehement enemy of Islam, denying the futile attempts of the Christians themselves and stating in no uncertain terms that all the theories of theirs are nonsense!

The Bible in existence today is not divine, whereas the Glorious Qur'aan that is in existence today is of divine origin. Hence, the "Torah and Injil²¹⁹" of the Jews and Christians of today, does not contain divine information, whereas the Qur'aan does.

As already mentioned an important point to always remember is that the Old and New Testaments were only constructed long after the revelation of the Glorious Qur'ân. This confirms that the Jews and Christians could have received certain information from the Glorious Qur'ân. It is important to point out that the first known translation into a western language of the Glorious Qur'aan was

²¹⁹ The words 'Injil' and 'Torah' are Arabic words stolen from the Glorious Qur'aan. The Christians have no right to use Qur'aanic Arabic words as they claim their 'original scriptures' are in Greek! Dr. J.H.Hertz, (Late chief Rabbi of the British Empire) in his works 'The Pentateuch and Haftorahs', 1961, states that: "It is known in history that the original name of the book, which was revealed to the early Jews long before 250 BC, is lost and there is also no divine evidence from which the Jews and Christians can produce their own source, which says what their book was called. Fortunately for them the name of Moses book was revealed to the last Prophet of Islâm and is referred to in the Glorious Qur'ân as at-Taurât, which sounds very similar to the word "Torah". Were it not for this reference the Jews would have had no divine evidence that their holy book of Moses was called at-Taurâh". One can see their deviousness again in using words that their holy books do not possess and pass it off as the Bible's words. The word 'Bible' is also not in the Bible! Check it out for yourself!

made in 1143 CE from Arabic into Latin. This by no means infer that the Christians did not have access to the Glorious Qur'ân prior to that date, as Muslims were already settled in Spain in the early eighth century (711 CE), long before the completion of the Massoretic text which was done in 916 C.E.

In other words Islam and the Qur'aan were present in Spain more than two hundred years before the first Bible was handwritten. This proves that the Jews and Christians had first hand access to the Qur'aanic knowledge. It is recorded in their history books that Europe was in the **DARK AGES**²²⁰ when Islam was spreading civilisation all around. Furthermore, when Islam was spreading in Spain, many Europeans were coming into the Arab lands and especially to Baghdad University to study, as there were no universities in Europe. The Caliphate paid for the studies and upkeep of these foreigners while they studied.

This settlement in Spain of the Muslims resulted in a victory for the world as far as the acquisition of knowledge is concerned. This must have enlightened the Textual Critics about the events of the Israelite prophets (p.b.u. them) as mentioned in the Glorious Qur'ân. The meaning of the word 'original' according to The New Collins Concise Dictionary, 1985 is: *"Relating to an origin or beginning... the first and genuine form of something, from which others are derived."*

It is clear that 'the first and genuine form of something' is the original. To present a copy of anything not originating from the original and then to claim that such a copy is an original is highly deceptive and in fact can be labeled as bogus. 'Original' must always be understood in its correct perception. It is an established fact that the original divine books were 'lost' before Jesus's (pbuh) time. The Roman Catholic Church described it as follows:

"Of all books, the Bible is the most outstanding. By reason of its many human authors, it would more accurately be described as a collection of seventy-three different books. But since these authors

²²⁰ *'Dark Ages of Europe'*: The reason it is called 'Dark ages' is that the nations of Europe were living in caves and walking around completely naked as they were uncivilized and knew nothing about clothing, building of houses, roads etc. When these people came to study in Muslim lands (*free education in the Universities of Baghdad, Damascus*) and experienced the beautiful civilized manner in which Muslims lived, they 'imported' the civilisation to their backward nations. However much they try to deny these facts their own Scholars have preserved them in their historical records.

were all inspired by the same God, it is rightly regarded as one book, and presented within two covers as one story."

The above statement by the Roman Catholic Church lets the cat out of the bag as it clearly states that the Bible was written by **'human authors' and presented as 'their story'**. So even in the Church it is accepted that the Bible is not divine and is a story of many human authors, so in truth it cannot be called a revelation from God.

Jesus (pbuh) never spoke English: The Bibles that the English speaking Christians and more especially the Missionaries insist on calling the word of God are deceptive and bogus. The English Bibles are translations of the Greek Manuscripts, which is a language foreign to Jesus (pbuh) - so in fact the Christian Church has zilch that can be called genuine. According to Peake, referring to the Septuagint, the **'translators were just as ignorant of the meaning as were the Massorettes who vocalized the Bible in the 8th-9th cent. A.D.'** A very significant disclosure concerning the destruction of the Pentateuch is given in the New Bible Dictionary. This will clear all the uncertainty contained in the present non-divine reconstructed Pentateuch.

The statement is made in the following words: "The tradition expressed in 2 Esdras 14:21-22, that the scrolls of the Pentateuch, burned in Nebuchadrezzar's siege of Jerusalem, were rewritten by Ezra, was apparently accepted by a number of the early church fathers, e.g. Irenaeus, Tertullian, Clement of Alexandria, Jerome. They did not however reject the Mosaic authorship of the original law. The first recorded instance of such a rejection is the statement of John of Damascus concerning the Nasaraeans, a sect of Jewish Christians (PG 94. 688-689) [PG = J. P. Migne, Patrologia Graeca]. The Clementine Homilies teach that diabolical interpolations were made in the Pentateuch to try to put Adam, Noah and the Patriarchs in a bad light"

Irrespective of Protestants and Jewish plotting to find non-divine support for an illegal authorship for the Pentateuch, this will not change the fact that it is only an attempt to find the author of the long lost Pentateuch. This fact could find support in the following quotation of the New Bible Dictionary, which states: **"The exact origin of Genesis remains something of a mystery."**

Genesis derived its name from the Septuagint. *According to Peake, referring to the Septuagint, 'the translators were just as ignorant of the meaning as were the Massorettes who vocalized the Bible in the*

8th-9th century A.D.’ A very significant disclosure concerning the destruction of the Pentateuch is given in the New Bible Dictionary. This will clear all the uncertainty contained in the present non-divine reconstructed Pentateuch.

Book 17, Esther: “We do not know who wrote the book, and the suggestion that Mordecai was the author is based on a misunderstanding of 9:20.”

“The author is unknown. Various suggestions have been made: Job, Elihu, Moses Solomon, Isaiah, Hezekiah, Baruch the friend of Jeremiah, etc. None can be established.” Book 18, Job: [n.b.d. p. 413]

Yet this is no evidence that David was the author of the Psalms as we have it today. It is however stated:

“Davidic authorship of many of the psalms has often been denied...” “Whether the collection was made by Solomon himself, by a member of his court, or by later collector, we have no means of knowing.”

Yet, we also find the following statement: **“The Rabbis said, ‘Hezekiah and his company wrote Isaiah, Proverbs, the Song of Songs and Ecclesiastes’ (Baba Bathra15a) - i.e. they edited or published them. As regards Proverbs, this tradition probably has no other basis than the rubric of 25:1.”**

The Jews are a new nation created by the Greeks and Romans through the raping of the Israelite women as stated by Paul Johnson in his book “The History of the Jews”. Therefore, the Essenes never accepted the Jews or the Jewish religion.

‘The Dead Sea Scrolls in English 1987 by Geza Vermes’ refers to the oldest known Biblical information in history. However, it is very important to mention that its content ought to be analysed to determine the truth, as unreliable Textual Critics²²¹ who concealed the documents for more than 50 years could have reconstructed some of the fragments referred to. It is reported in Vermes’ book as follows:

(1) “The beginning of the manuscripts is badly mutilated. Column 1 is missing. Column iii - xii are so fragmented that only a very

221 “Textual Critics”. These textual critics wrote the Bible from “fragments and portions” supposedly from the ‘original Bible’ that were found and ‘reconstructed’ in different eras of Biblical history. **These Textual Critics are nameless - No court of Law will accept nameless witnesses, yet the Vatican has no qualms about using these faceless and nameless textual critics as witnesses for God’s word.**

hypothetical reconstruction, exclusively from biblical texts is possible".

(2) *"The aim of the redactor is to present the message of the scroll not as an interpretation of the Bible, but as an immediate divine revelation. For this purpose, not only does he formulate the supplementary legislation as directly spoken by God, but also regularly substitutes 'I' for 'the Lord = YHWH' of Scripture".*

This statement seems to be a deliberate attempt by the reconstructors of the Dead Sea Scrolls to conceal the actual name of God. On the one hand, it is claimed that not even a 'hypothetical reconstruction' is possible. However, on the other hand, these writers make their own hypothetical reconstruction by substituting what could the name of God be in their view."

Mr. Bart Ehrman who wrote the book: **'The Orthodox corruption of Scripture'** (page 27) writes: *"In any event, none of the original manuscripts of the books of the Bible now survive. What do survive are copies made over the centuries, or more accurately, copies of the copies of the copies, some 5366 of them in the Greek language alone, that date from the 2nd century down to the 16th. Strikingly, with the exception of the smallest fragments, no two of these copies are exact".* On pages 27-28, he writes: *"when a scribe appended an additional twelve verses to the end of the Gospel of Mark, this can scarcely be attributed to mere oversight."*

Translation of the Bible into English by William Tyndale:

Up until the 16th Century there were no translations of the Bible in English. When Tyndale translated the Bible into English he was declared a heretic, was hunted down and eventually strangled and burnt to death on October 6th, 1536. We can only conclude that this dastardly act of the Church was done because when the people read and understood what was written in the Bible they refused to believe it as the Word of God. In similar manner, when Galileo invented the telescope and concluded that the earth was round and revolved around the sun, he was also declared a heretic and killed as this theory (*which proved later to be a fact*) went against the teaching of the Bible that propounded the belief that the earth was flat and stationary.

Sir Godfrey Higgins writes in his book, "History of the Bible": ...many passages have undergone such serious modification of meaning as to leave us in painful uncertainty as to what the Apostles had actually written."

At the Jesus (pbuh) seminar in America in 1993, it was concluded that *“82% of the words ascribed to Jesus (pbuh) in the gospels were not actually spoken by him.”* Britannica, 12th edition; vol.3, page 643

Eusebius and the other Church fathers, it is reasonable to believe, would not hesitate to make what alterations were necessary in the writings and records of the cult to bring them into line with the creeds they produced. Honesty and accuracy, as we understand them, did not exist in those days. For three hundred years prior to Nicia no historical records existed, so there was no great difficulty in deluding the people as to the past story of the cult. Any thing could be added to or subtracted from its past beliefs without undue comment”. J. Arthur Findlay

There you have it, from the pens of learned CHRISTIAN SCHOLARS that the present Bible is the work of ordinary men and can never be divine. What additional proof could any intelligent person need to disqualify every Bible in existence as the word of God in any language! *Can any sensible person argue with such irrefutable evidence?*

Matt 5: 17 Think not that I (Jesus) am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil.

Matt 5:18 For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.

Matt 5:19 Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.

“If ye love me, keep my commandments” John 14:15

“Those who reject faith, - neither their possessions nor their (numerous) progeny will avail them aught against Allah: they are themselves but fuel for the fire of hell”. Al-Qur’aan Ch. 3 v. 10

“Those who reject Faith, and die rejecting, - on them is Allah’s curse, and the curse of the angels, and all of mankind. They will abide therein: their penalty will not be lightened, nor will respite be their (lot)”. Al-Qur’aan Chapter 2, verses 161& 162.

On the 8th December 2006 at 9am G.M.T. it was reported by the B.B.C. Radio that over the last twenty years **75,000 Catholic Priests have left the Church,** and thousands more will follow.

On the 9th May 2007, at 5.20 GMT it was reported by Al-Jazeera English News Service, (*reporter- Lucia Newman*) that Brazil which has half of the world's Catholics, are leaving Catholicism at a tremendous rate of **One Million people per annum**, as they have become disillusioned with the Pope and Church; with the ongoing sex scandals, and a belief system that is incomprehensible etc. More than 10,000,000 Brazilians have abandoned the Church in the last ten years!

The compiler wishes to thank sincerely the following persons for their kind assistance in the compilation of this book. May Allah reward them abundantly, insha Allah!

Imraan Adam: DPB Printers	Mrs.Hajjera Moosa	M.S. Adams-Lenz
Nazir Adam	Ayaz A. Camroodien	Mrs.Aneesa Moosa
Abduragiem Olivier	Sulaiman Fakier	Abdul Wagied Joseph
Jehane Ghanty (Mauritius)	Mustaq Abdullah	Ebrahim Adams-Lenz

Quotations taken from: Sheikh Ahmed Deedat - The Choice and from Common Questions asked by Non-Muslims: by Dr. Zakir Naik

1. Sheikh Abdurahman Alexander - Lectures in 2006
2. Moulana A. Vidyarthi- 'Muhammed (pbuh) in World Scriptures'
3. Mr. Ebrahim: (Authenticity of the Bible)
4. The Holy Qur'aan. Translation by Moulana A. Muhammad

5. (a) History of the Jews by Paul Johnson, (b) Dummelow (c) The New Collins Concise Dictionary, 1985 (d) The Dead Sea Scrolls in English 1987, by John Allegro (*This book has been banned because of the Church*) (e) Peake's Commentary of the Bible, May 1919 (f) Encyclopedia of Britannica, vol 13, (g) New Bible Dictionary 1988 (h) New Bible Commentary 3rd Edition 1988 (i) Virtue's Catholic Encyclopedia 1965 (j) E.W. Lane's Arabic-English Lexicon (k) The Westminster Dictionary of the Bible, by John Davis / revised by Henry Snyder Gehman 1944 (l) The Holy Family Bible, (m) Virtue & Company Ltd, London, 1959, (n) F.A.C.T. of Cape Town-Pamphlets, (o) Before Nicea by A. al Ashanti & A. R. Bowes, (p) Revised Standard Version-Bible, (q) New English Bible-Oxford Cambridge, (r) King James Version- Bible, (s) Christian Muslim Dialogue by Mr. H.M. Baagil (t) 'The Fog is Lifting'-by Mr. F. Solieman

Recommended websites: www.Quran.nu & www.fatwa-online.com

www.understand-islam.net. www.bridges-foundation.net. www.islamtomorrow.com.

To read the stories of priests accepting Islam²²² visit:

www.islamic-message.net

222 : *The following 9 are just a few of the pastors and Priests of various Churches that have already embraced Islam: Chaplain Yusuf Estes (USA); Minister and Elder of the Pentecostal Church (USA) Mr. Kenneth L. Jenkins; Dr. Gerald F. Dirk-Former Minister of the United Methodist Church (USA); A Lady Minister-Sue Watson, Missionary -Professor, Master's degree in Divinity (USA); Martin John Mwaipopo former Lutheran Archbishop of Tanzania; Mr. Raphael Narbaez, former Jehovah's Witness Minister (USA); Mr. George Anthony former Catholic Priest (Sri Lanka); Archbishop Viacheslav Polosin (Russia);*

***The Holy Prophet Muhammed (pbuh) said:
"Most certainly knowledge is the cure of ignorance!"***

The following persons who have reverted to Islam, from diverse backgrounds have posted their biographies of how they found Islam. They have heart touching stories to tell, *especially Aminah Assilmi whose sacrifice for the truth is exemplary.*

1. Hamzah Yusuf Hanson - American. Was a Greek Orthodox
2. Michael Wolfe- Father Jewish, Christian Mother
3. Aminah Assilmi- Baptist Family
4. Mikhail Sharovsky - Former Soviet Union Soldier; ultra nationalist Zionist.
5. Jeffrey Lang. Master Mathematician (USA) who had turned atheist at the age of 16, read the Qur'aan when he was 27/28 for the first time.

Read their stories on the following website: <http://www.zaytuna.org>
and
welcome-back.org

Please get in touch with the I.P.C.I. or the Bridges Foundation or the I.R.F for further information about Islam, or to have any questions answered.

Was Salaam!

The compiler makes an earnest du'a to Allah, the Most Kind, Most Merciful, and Most Compassionate to accept this work for the propagation of His deen, and to forgive all of us who were involved in this work; and to forgive all Muslims who submit to His Deen-Al-Islam. Ameen.